COPYRIGHT, 1928, BY HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY
COPYRIGHT RENEWED 1956, BY HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED INCLUDING THE RIGHT TO REPRODUCE
THIS BOOK OR PARTS THEREOF IN ANY FORM

The Riverside Press
CAMBRIDGE · MASSACHUSETTS
PRINTED IN THE U.S.A.

CONTENTS

SUGGESTIONS TO TEACHERS AND PUPILS v

INTRODUCTION ix

I. PARENTAGE AND BOYHOOD 1

II. SEEKING HIS FORTUNE 25

III. ADVENTURES IN LONDON 49

IV. RETURN TO PHILADELPHIA 63

V. IN BUSINESS FOR HIMSELF 78

VI. SELF-EDUCATION 107

VII. GEORGE WHITEFIELD 123

VIII. BEGINNING OF PUBLIC LIFE 129

IX. A PUBLIC-SPIRITED GENTLEMAN 140

X. A PHILADELPHIA CITIZEN 150

XI. IN THE SERVICE OF THE KING 163

XII. COMMON-SENSE IN WAR MATTERS 178

XIII. FRANKLIN THE PHILOSOPHER 190

XIV. DEPARTURE FOR ENGLAND 197

XV. THE AFFAIR WITH THE PROPRIETARIES 208

NOTES 214

QUESTIONS FOR STUDY AND REVIEW 227

QUESTIONS FROM RECENT COLLEGE ENTRANCE EXAMINATIONS . 233

TOPICS FOR ORAL AND WRITTEN COMPOSITION 233

SUGGESTIONS FOR SIMPLE DRAMATIZATIONS 235

INTERESTING BOOKS ON BENJAMIN FRANKLIN 236

APPENDIX 237

INDEX 241

ILLUSTRATIONS

"I REACHED THROUGH THE WATER TO HIS SHOCK PATE AND DREW HIM UP" . . . . *Frontispiece*

"I WALKED OFF WITH A ROLL UNDER EACH ARM" . 28

FRANKLIN AT THE PRINTING PRESS 68

FACSIMILE OF A PAGE FROM *POOR RICHARD'S ALMANAC* 110

"A POOR WOMAN SWEEPING MY PAVEMENT WITH A BIRCH BROOM" 154

AFTER A PAINTING BY DUPLESSIS IN THE BOSTON MUSEUM OF FINE ARTS 174

"AN EXPERIMENT I MADE WITH A KITE AT PHILADELPHIA" 194

SUGGESTIONS TO TEACHERS AND PUPILS

EMERSON has said that institutions are but the lengthened shadows of men. The history of the American democracy is a tribute to its founders and defenders. The gratitude of each new generation for the great men of the past is best expressed by the study of their lives and the following of their examples. The boys and girls of to-day should, therefore, as the citizens of to-morrow, begin the study of the *Autobiography* with a sincere desire to learn as much as possible of the real greatness of Benjamin Franklin. A feeling not merely of respect but even of patriotic interest should make such a study much more profitable than the reading of books that are accepted merely as a part of the course.

If the study of the *Autobiography* is to serve as an introduction to biography, as it frequently does, the student will note, from the beginning, the simplicity of the form. The writing of biography demands a somewhat less rigorous technique than the writing of the short story, the novel, or poetry. The main thing required of the biographer is that he shall justify his treatment by his results. This freedom is especially characteristic of autobiography, for in that form of writing the author is permitted to tell his own life story in his own way. Throughout the study of the *Autobiography* the student should observe the ease and naturalness with which Franklin wrote.

The student who has found fiction and poetry interesting should find a new interest in biography. Perhaps he will agree with the old saying, "Truth is stranger than fiction." Fiction is interesting because it represents life as the author has observed or imagined it; autobiography is interesting because it represents life as the author has

lived it. Franklin will take you into the confidences of the family circle and give you an intimate view of himself, revealing his successes and failures with charming frankness. You may find yourself in him, for the problems of the tallow chandler's son and the printer's apprentice are repeated from generation to generation.

As the greatness of Franklin becomes more evident, his limitations are constantly emphasized by references to his mistakes — the "errata." His life was not a perfect one. His faults have not been hard to find. The wish has frequently been expressed that he might have been less materialistic, that he might have paid more attention to the spiritual forces of life. There may be good ground for such a criticism; nevertheless the student will do well to realize that a liberal education, such as he himself is enjoying, might have created in Franklin the desire for such things. At the same time the student should stop to think how he, with his better opportunities of culture, may find in this self-made man suggestions that may prove helpful in forming his own character and habits. Franklin has been criticized also for a lack of personal piety. Perhaps there was something to be desired in that respect, but any boy or girl may well cultivate the man's broad and generous tolerance.

If education is the bringing out of the best that is in one, the student should feel constantly the challenge of the *Autobiography*. The success of Franklin is possible, at least to a degree, for the average high school student. Even in the school community and during the period of preparation for citizenship he may follow Franklin's example. In the use of his time, in his contacts with fellow students and teachers, in making plans for the future, in matters of leadership and loyalty in school affairs, he will find ample opportunity to do so. In preparing the assignment he should take careful note of Franklin's ideals, in order to emphasize them in the classroom discussion.

The student who is alert to his opportunity will find in

he *Autobiography* interesting sidelights on American and English history. An instance is the close-up view of the haracter of General Braddock and the cause of his de- eat. The troubles with the proprietaries and the begin- nings of the national defense are other examples. There will also be little glimpses now and then into the field of cience, in which the high school student is becoming nterested. As an aid to the better understanding of these eferences, notes have been provided whenever they eemed likely to prove helpful. They should be consulted s a part of the preparation of the assignment.

The simplicity of the style of the *Autobiography* should e a constant source of pleasure and profit — of pleasure ecause it makes the story so readable, and of profit be- cause it sets such a worthy example for those whose Eng- ish is in a process of formation. While Franklin says that his style was acquired by the imitation of Addison and the *Spectator*, it has none of the cold and stately polish of that eighteenth-century English prose. It is rather the result of long practice in using simple English to convey a mes- sage effectively to people of average intelligence. It is free from the high-sounding rhetoric that characterizes the speech of many men prominent in public life. As Franklin found inspiration in Addison, so the student who is learn- ing to write and speak will find inspiration in Franklin. He will have less occasion to follow him with the diction- ary than to pause in admiration of his homely phrases. "I was not a little surprised," he says, "and Keimer stared ike a poisoned pig." Again, "I returned on board a little puzzled, but still not doubting." Or, "Being returned to Philadelphia, I found the association went on swim- mingly." It will not take the student long to discover, also, that much of Franklin's genial humor is traceable to his quaint simplicity.

While the limited time of the recitation hour may con- fine the study to rather brief portions of the text, he should get the sweep and development of the story by

reading at least a chapter at a sitting. The smaller assignment may then be prepared by a second reading and a more detailed study of the text.

As a final suggestion, it may be added that a generous investment of time and interest is the best guarantee of pleasure and profit in the study of such a classic as Franklin's *Autobiography*.

INTRODUCTION

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

THE *Autobiography* of Benjamin Franklin is the life story of a great American. To each new generation it appeals with increasing interest as a part of its literary heritage.

While not unmindful of the contributions to the country's glory made by Washington, or Jefferson, or any of the other outstanding men of the period of the Revolution, historians and critics are still seeking phrases by which to express the true greatness of Benjamin Franklin. "The First Great American," "The Friend of Human Kind," "Exemplar of Common Sense," "The Finest Example in History of the Self-made Man!" Such are the attempts to pay a fitting tribute to the genius, character, and achievements of the man.

The interest of the *Autobiography* may be attributed, first of all, to the patriotism of Franklin. In the winning of independence, the American Colonies passed through a crisis in which he rendered most valuable and timely aid. By his support of the cause, by his powers of persuasion as a diplomatist, and by a great variety of acts of public service, he won the friendship of France and the good will of England, and helped to shape the destinies of the country that Washington founded. By temperament he was not a revolutionist, but he believed in the principles on which the Revolution was based, and did much to establish them. It is indeed fitting that he should have been the only American who signed his name to all four of the great documents that record the birth of the new nation — the Declaration of Independence, the Treaty of Alliance with France, the Treaty of Peace with England, and the Constitution of the United States.

As the first representative from the New World to the

Old, Benjamin Franklin was a picturesque figure. Surrounded by the splendor of the court of Louis XVI of France, he stood out in striking contrast with his surroundings, a Yankee in homespun, unabashed by curious eyes, conscious only of the dignity of his mission. Simplicity was never more impressive, nor patriotism more evident.

Closely related to Franklin's love of his country was his love of his fellowmen. Probably no other American has given so worthy an example of the socially inclined temperament. His faith in men and women was unbounded and found expression through his kindly, cheerful nature, his constant good humor, his tact and tolerance, and his freedom from jealousy. Throughout his long career of more than eighty years, he practiced industry, thrift, and economy, but without selfishness. He was as generous with fortune as with fame. The wealth that followed success only made him a philanthropist. The pen that might have made him one of the foremost American writers served him only as another means of promoting the interests of his fellows. His inventive mind was ever thinking of something that would make life more comfortable and wholesome. He saw the need of lightning rods, and stoves, and spectacles, and a remedy for smoking chimneys, and he supplied those needs. He founded schools and libraries to benefit the mind, and hospitals to benefit the body. Second only to his passion for serving the country he loved, was his desire to increase the happiness of all mankind.

The great variety of activities that crowded Franklin's long life are aptly suggested by the phrase, "The Many-sided Franklin," used by Paul Leicester Ford as the title of his interesting and accurate characterization. It is much better than the old phrase, "Jack of All Trades," for that immediately suggests, "And Master of None," which cannot be applied to Franklin. He is the only American, indeed, who has achieved distinction in the

threefold rôle of writer, statesman, and scientist. That he was a scholar is evidenced by the honorary doctor's degrees conferred upon him by Oxford, Edinburgh, and Saint Andrews, and by his being made associate of the Academy of Paris. As a printer, journalist, and writer, as a humorist, as a scientist and inventor, as a business man and philanthropist, as a patriot, statesman, and diplomatist, Benjamin Franklin knew life in so many phases that for sheer variety the *Autobiography* has never been equaled.

The absorbing interest of such a "many-sided" life is only increased by the fact that American history affords only one other such example of the self-made man, the only one that is comparable with Franklin — Abraham Lincoln. The *Autobiography* has been the inspiration of numerous boys and girls, native and foreign-born, in school and out, to make more of themselves. Such native endowments, such achievements, such fame at home and abroad, apparently not one of them has revealed, for there has been only one Benjamin Franklin. But his love of his country and of his fellow men are lofty ideals. His sincerity, his simplicity and industry, his kindly humor and generous sympathy have helped many who have not known fame, to become useful citizens and good Americans.

The Autobiography

The *Autobiography* of Benjamin Franklin has an interesting and rather curious literary history. In 1757 Franklin was sent to England to represent the Province of Pennsylvania in a dispute with the Penn family. From then until 1775 he spent much of his time in England, having been appointed as colonial agent for Pennsylvania in 1764 and for Massachusetts in 1770.

During one of his long absences from America, when he was separated from his family, he decided to write the

story of his life for the benefit of his son, William Franklin, who had been admitted to the English bar and later appointed Governor of New Jersey. The young man had received the appointment through the favor of the court and was inclined to the English point of view, which caused a break with his father, and the two only partly reconciled before Franklin died.

It was in 1771 that Franklin began the writing of the *Autobiography*. He was spending a week at the country home of his friend, Dr. Jonathan Shipley, Bishop of Saint Asaph, at Twyford, England. At this time he wrote the story of the early part of his life, covering the first twenty-five years. The first section closes at the top of page 88 of this edition.

The activities that crowded Franklin's life for the next ten or more years seem to have forced him to drop the *Autobiography*, for it was not until 1784, thirteen years later, that he determined to continue it, being urged to do so by his friend Benjamin Vaughan, to whom he showed the early part. At this time Franklin was United States Minister to France, his grandson, William Temple Franklin, being his secretary. From Passy, a suburb of Paris, he wrote the second section, which continues from the top of page 88 to page 107 of this edition.

Four years later, in 1788, he continued the account as far as page 208 of this edition, which closes with the arrival of Franklin and his son in London on July 27, 1757. During the last few years of his life, Franklin added the pages contained in Chapter XV, leaving the *Autobiography* unfinished and repeating some details from previous parts in his various new beginnings.

The story of the writing of the *Autobiography* is interesting; the story of the manuscript is curious. After Franklin's death, in 1790, the first portion of the *Autobiography*, written in England, was published in French in Paris. It is thought that the translator had gained possession of the manuscript in some mysterious way and

published it without permission. It is also curious that there were two distinct translations of the French back into English published in 1793, one of which continued to be published in England and America down to 1818, when the original English version was published for the first time. This appeared in an edition of Franklin's writings prepared by his grandson, William Temple Franklin, for a London publisher. The question is, Where had the original manuscript been all that time?

The *Autobiography* was reissued in 1868 by Mr. John Bigelow, a distinguished successor of Franklin in the office of Minister of the United States to France. Mr. Bigelow prepared his edition carefully by comparing the edition of William Temple Franklin with a copy of the original manuscript which he obtained from a member of the family of M. Le Veillard, for whom Benjamin Bache Franklin, another grandson of Benjamin Franklin's, had made a copy in 1789. It is from the Bigelow version that the present school edition has been printed, it being safe to assume that that version is the nearest of the different editions to the *Autobiography* as it was written by Benjamin Franklin.

The Later Life of Benjamin Franklin (1757–1790) [1]

The life of Benjamin Franklin, from his birth on January 17, 1706, to the time of his first diplomatic mission to England in 1757, is given in detail in the *Autobiography*. It is a matter of regret that the press of public affairs made it impossible for him to continue the story, for many of the most valuable services to his country were rendered late in his life, when he turned with perfect ease from

[1] This sketch continues the story of Franklin's life from the point where it breaks off in the *Autobiography*. It may be used as a part of the introductory material or it may be postponed until the reading of the *Autobiography* has been completed.

journalism to diplomacy. An appreciation of his final attainments requires attention to these crowning years of his greatness. Fortunately much material has been preserved in his letters and in the comments of his contemporaries.

In 1757, Franklin was sent to England as agent for the colony of Pennsylvania to effect the settlement of a dispute that had arisen between that colony and the Penn family. The matter at issue was the right of the Assembly to tax the proprietary estates. He was attended by his son William but left his wife and his daughter Sally in America. He found a comfortable home with a Mrs. Stevenson and her daughter Mary, whom he greatly admired and whom he hoped his son would marry. During his stay he wrote a number of interesting, chatty letters, and frequently sent home articles of clothing and household furnishings, which he selected with great care and enthusiasm. That he was interested in his daughter's education and missed her attentions as well as the companionship of his wife, is indicated by such excerpts from his letters as these:

"I hope Sally applies herself to her French and music, and that I shall find that she has made great proficiency. . . . Sally's last letter was the best wrote that of late I have seen of hers. I only wish she was a little more careful of her spelling. I hope she continues to love going to church, and would have her read over and over again the *Whole Duty of Man*, and the *Lady's Library*."

"I have made your compliments to Mrs. Stevenson. She is indeed very obliging, takes great care of my health, and is very diligent when I am in any way indisposed; but yet I have a thousand times wished you with me, and my little Sally with her ready hands and feet to do, and go, and come, and get what is wanted."

Not only was Franklin successful in his mission of establishing the right of Pennsylvania to tax the proprietary estates, but he also found it easy to make the acquaint-

ance of people of prominence because his inventions and his experiments in electricity had given him distinction. He was received with great courtesy at Cambridge University, while both Oxford and Edinburgh conferred upon him the LL.D. degree. Especially pleasing was a trip he made to Ecton, in Northamptonshire, which he mentions in the *Autobiography* as his father's birthplace. Besides visiting the graves of his ancestors and learning much about them, he met a daughter of Thomas Franklin, his father's brother, who entertained him and gave some interesting details of family history.

After an absence of some five years, Franklin returned to America, with a broader view of the British empire and of the importance of the American colonies as a part of that empire. After a brief stay of two years, he returned to England to serve again as the agent for Pennsylvania. During the short time he was in America, he made a tour of the northern colonies — in the spring of 1763 — to inspect and regulate the post offices, traveling some sixteen hundred miles.

In the fall of 1764 he was accompanied to his ship by three hundred of his friends, who showered him with good wishes, and after a successful voyage of thirty days he arrived again in London. At this time the passage of the Stamp Act was threatened and Franklin found his hands full because of the increasingly complex, if not strained, relations between England and America. From one of his letters it is evident that he hoped soon to find leisure to complete his *Art of Virtue*.

After a stay of some ten years in England as the agent for Pennsylvania, Massachusetts, New Jersey, and Georgia, Franklin decided to return to America and support the cause of the colonists, since it was evident that it would be impossible to avoid a break between them and the mother country. The death of his wife, with whom he had lived happily for forty-four years, which occurred just before he prepared to set sail, came as a heavy blow.

On arriving in Philadelphia he was welcomed with an ovation. An ode was prepared for the occasion, and on the next day he was unanimously elected by the Assembly as a delegate to the Provincial Congress. He entered enthusiastically into the American cause and, after an unsuccessful attempt to win favor for it in Canada, joined in the discussions that led to the preparation and adoption of the Declaration of Independence.

When the break finally came and the Colonies announced their independence to the world, it was evident that Franklin's greatest value lay in the field of diplomacy rather than in the military. While he had taken part in the first attempts to build up a defense of the Colonies against the Indians and by cleverness induced even the Quakers to contribute, he was essentially a man of peace and an advocate of arbitration.

It was evident that the new nation must make friends in Europe to guarantee its continued independence. It was also evident that France was a most desirable ally because of her natural hostility toward England as a result of the French and Indian War. Accordingly, although he was seventy years old, Franklin was unanimously chosen for the difficult mission and left for France late in the year in which the Declaration was signed, 1776. Establishing headquarters at Passy, near Paris, he made hosts of friends for the new country, found time for scientific matters, and kept up an extensive correspondence with his former associates in America.

It was not until 1785 that Congress relieved Franklin of his duties in France and permitted him to return to Philadelphia. He had been signally successful in matters that required the greatest skill in diplomacy. He had received flattering attentions from a multitude of admirers. He had found time to continue the studies for which he had a liking amounting almost to affection. He had been overjoyed that America had gained her independence and peace had finally come. But the infirmities of age were

beginning to weigh upon him. The death of his wife had broken a most helpful companionship. He had lost much of his property. It was with a natural feeling of longing for his old home and relief from the cares of state that he set sail for America for the last time.

There was one thing in him that the years could not change; that was his sunny optimism, which had carried him through a long life of victorious toil. When he returned to Philadelphia on September 13, 1785, he was welcomed home with an enthusiasm that was prompted by the deepest gratitude for the great and distinguished service he had rendered to his country. As a mark of appreciation, he was elected President (Governor) of the State of Pennsylvania and reëlected in 1786 and 1787.

There remained for him only one more opportunity to serve his country, but it brought a fitting climax to his long and enviable career as a statesman and diplomat. In 1787, he was elected a delegate to the convention that framed the Constitution of the United States. He was now eighty-one years old and a center of interest to the opposing factions in that memorable gathering. To the Anti-Federalists he was an old dotard in his second childhood; to the Federalists he was the great philosopher, just as Washington was the great commander. In what history has regarded as the ablest group of men ever assembled in America, he exerted a quiet but powerful influence by supporting such men as Hamilton and Madison and by urging the members to yield their personal opinions when they tended to wreck the convention.

When the question of representation had reached a crisis that threatened adjournment and failure, the venerable Franklin arose and moved that thereafter the sessions be opened with prayer. The effect was a moment of dramatic intensity unsurpassed in American history. Although a perusal of the *Autobiography* or the *Almanac* would indicate that prayer played a large part in Franklin's scheme of life, he seems not to have been a man who

was regarded as especially inclined to personal piety. While his motion was voted down, it became famous in American political annals and is preserved in Washington among the great state papers. Since then the opening of the sessions of legislative assemblies with prayer has become a well-established custom in America.

Although Franklin lived to welcome George Washington as the first President of the United States, the moment in which he affixed his name to the great document that bore strong evidence of his helpful suggestions was probably the climax of his long career as a statesman. An incident of the signing, related by James Madison, gives a hint of the emotion he felt at that time: "While the last members were signing," Madison says, "Dr. Franklin, looking toward the president's chair, at the back of which a rising sun happened to be painted, observed to a few members near him that painters had found it difficult to distinguish in their art a rising, from a setting, sun. 'I have,' said he, 'often and often in the course of the session, and the vicissitudes of my hopes and fears as to its issue, looked at that behind the president, without being able to tell whether it was rising or setting; but now, at length, I have the happiness to know that it is a rising and not a setting sun.'"

While the last few weeks of Franklin's life were marked by great suffering, he bore the pain with splendid courage and awaited the end with a composure truly remarkable. "Let us sit till the evening of life is spent," he wrote to a friend. "The last hours are always the most joyful. When we can stay no longer, it is time to bid each other good night, separate and go quietly to bed." And it was in just such a moment of calm and peace, with his family and friends about him, that he completed his long and eventful life on April 17, 1790, at the age of eighty-four years and three months.

Back in 1728, Franklin had composed his own epitaph, when, a printer twenty-two years old, he had an illness

that he thought might prove fatal. While this epitaph was not placed on his tomb in the yard of old Christ Church, Philadelphia, it has come to be regarded as a perfect expression of Franklin's philosophy of life, death, and immortality:

The Body
of
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN
PRINTER
(Like the cover of an old book
Its contents torn out
And stript of its lettering and gilding)
Lies here, food for worms.
But the work shall not be lost
For it will (as he believed) appear once more
In a new and more elegant edition
Revised and corrected
by
The Author.

The death of Franklin was followed by a continuous succession of tributes to his memory. His funeral was attended by a crowd of twenty thousand. Congress decreed a period of mourning, and the National Assembly of France paid a similar tribute. In many places in America and abroad eulogies were spoken. A statue of him by John J. Boyle was placed before the Post Office in Philadelphia and on the two hundredth anniversary of his birth, January 17, 1906, a duplicate was unveiled in Paris. Statues have been unveiled in Washington, New York, Boston, and Chicago. An impressive memorial is the statue, "Franklin the Youth," which stands in the grounds of the University of Pennsylvania in Philadelphia.

Peculiarly fitting have been the tributes of books to America's most distinguished printer. Each succeeding year has brought forth some new biography or edition of

his writings. But the greatest tribute to Franklin is to be found not in eloquence, or stone, or the combined product of the pen and the book-maker's art, but rather in the sincere effort of the boys and girls of America and many foreign lands to make the study of the *Autobiography* a part of their education.

Franklin's Philosophy of Life, as Expressed in Poor Richard's Almanac

God helps them that help themselves.

Drive thy business, or it will drive thee.

Diligence is the mother of good luck.

To-day is yesterday's pupil.

Have you somewhat to do to-morrow? Do it to-day!

No gains without pains.

How few there are who have courage enough to own their faults, or resolution enough to mend them.

The way to be safe, is never to be secure.

Well done is better than well said.

Wish not so much to live long as to live well.

No man e'er was glorious who was not laborious.

Blessed is he that expects nothing, for he shall never be disappointed.

Tributes to Benjamin Franklin

Few Americans have been so generally acclaimed as Benjamin Franklin, not only in this country but also abroad. In the many tributes that have been paid to him are interpretations of his life and character that serve well to introduce the study of the *Autobiography*. A few have been chosen as typical and suggestive:

"If to be venerated for benevolence, if to be admired for talents, if to be esteemed for patriotism, if to be be-

loved for philanthropy, can gratify the human mind, you must have the pleasing consolation to know that you have not lived in vain." (George Washington, writing to Franklin in 1789.)

"There appeared to me more respect and veneration attached to the character of Franklin in France than to any other person in the same country, foreign or native." (Thomas Jefferson.)

"By the instruction which he gave, by his discoveries, and by his achievements in public life he earns the distinction of having rendered to men varied and useful services excelled by no other man; and thus he established a claim upon the gratitude of mankind so broad that history holds few who can be his rivals." (John T. Morse, in *American Statesmen.* Houghton Mifflin Company.)

"His place is among that race of pamphleteers and essayists most of whom went before, but a few of whom came after, the war for independence."

"The language in which he put his thoughts was plain and vigorous English. This is all the more praiseworthy as most American writers of his day used a vicious Johnsonese." (John Bach McMaster, in *American Men of Letters Series.* Houghton Mifflin Company.)

"Tolerant with all religions, sweet-tempered, with remarkable tact and genuine kindness, honest, and above jealousy." (Sarah K. Bolton, in *Famous American Statesmen.* Crowell, '06.)

"Poor, he achieved wealth by his industry; ignorant, he raised himself by study to a man of science; unknown, he won by his discoveries and by his services, by the elevation of his ideas, and by the extent of his benefactions, the admiration of Europe and the gratitude of America. Franklin possessed at once genius and virtue, glory and good fortune." (François A. M. Mignet, the French historian, in *History of the French Revolution* (Everyman), Dutton; also Macmillan.)

CHRONOLOGICAL OUTLINE OF FRANKLIN'S LIFE

1706. Born in Boston, January 17.
1714. Entered grammar school.
1716. Taken out of school to help his father.
1718. Became an apprentice in the printing office of his brother, James.
1723. Ran away to Philadelphia because of ill treatment.
1724. Went to London to buy printer's equipment, under false promises of the Governor of Pennsylvania.
1727. Became ill of pleurisy. Recovered. Founded the JUNTO club.
1728. Composed his own epitaph.
1729. Published *The Pennsylvania Gazette*, in partnership with Hugh Meredith.
1730. Married Deborah Read (Rogers), September 1.
1732. Founded the Philadelphia Library. Began the publication of *Poor Richard's Almanac*.
1733. Began the study of modern languages.
1736. Chosen clerk to the General Assembly of Pennsylvania.
1737. Appointed postmaster at Philadelphia.
1742. Invented the open stove.
1744. Founded the American Philosophical Society.
1749. Founded the Academy of the Province of Penn-
to sylvania, which later became the University of Penn-
1751. sylvania.
1752. Made his famous electrical experiment with the kite.
1753. Appointed, jointly with William Hunter, postmaster-general of the colonies.
1755. Procured supplies and transport wagons for General Braddock's expedition against Fort Duquesne.
1757. Was sent to London as agent for Pennsylvania in its dispute with the Penn family.
1759. Received the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws from the University of Saint Andrews, Scotland.
1762. Returned to Philadelphia.

1763. Traveled through the provinces to supervise and regulate the postal system.
1764. Returned to London as colonial agent for Pennsylvania.
1766. Gave testimony against the Stamp Act before the House of Commons.
1770. Appointed agent for Massachusetts in England.
1771. Wrote first part of *Autobiography*.
1775. Returned to America. Elected by the Assembly a delegate to the Provincial Congress. Appointed postmaster-general of the colonies.
1776. Presided over the constitutional convention of Pennsylvania. Elected by Congress a member of the committee of five to frame a declaration of independence.
1778. Was received at the French Court. Appointed minister-plenipotentiary to France.
1781. Appointed a member of the commission to negotiate a treaty of peace between England and the United States.
1784. Continued the writing of the *Autobiography*.
1785. Resigned as minister to France and returned to the United States. Elected President (Governor) of Pennsylvania.
1786. Reëlected.
1787. Again reëlected. Delegate to the Constitution Convention.
1788. Brought the *Autobiography* down to 1757.
1790. Died April 17, aged 84.

THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

I

PARENTAGE AND BOYHOOD

DEAR SON: I have ever had pleasure in obtaining any little anecdotes of my ancestors. You may remember the inquiries I made among the remains of my relations when you were with me in England, and the journey I undertook for that purpose. Imagining it may be equally agreeable to you to know the circumstances of my life, many of which you are yet unacquainted with, and expecting the enjoyment of a week's uninterrupted leisure in my present country retirement, I sit down to write them for you. To which I have besides some other inducements. Having emerged from the poverty and obscurity in which I was born and bred to a state of affluence and some degree of reputation in the world, and having gone so far through life with a considerable share of felicity, the conducing means I made use of, which with the blessing of God so well succeeded, my posterity may like to know, as they may find some of them suitable to their own situations, and therefore fit to be imitated.

That felicity, when I reflected on it, has induced me sometimes to say, that were it offered to my choice, I should have no objection to a repetition of the same

life from its beginning, only asking the advantages authors have in a second edition to correct some faults of the first. So I might, besides correcting the faults, change some sinister accidents and events of it for others more favorable. But though this were denied, I should still accept the offer. Since such a repetition is not to be expected, the next thing most like living one's life over again seems to be a recollection of that life, and to make that recollection as durable as possible by putting it down in writing.

Hereby, too, I shall indulge the inclination so natural in old men, to be talking of themselves and their own past actions; and I shall indulge it without being tiresome to others, who, through respect to age, might conceive themselves obliged to give me a hearing, since this may be read or not as any one pleases. And, lastly (I may as well confess it, since my denial of it will be believed by nobody), perhaps I shall a good deal gratify my own *vanity*. Indeed, I scarce ever heard or saw the introductory words, "*Without vanity I may say*," etc., but some vain thing immediately followed. Most people dislike vanity in others, whatever share they have of it themselves; but I give it fair quarter wherever I meet with it, being persuaded that it is often productive of good to the possessor, and to others that are within his sphere of action; and therefore, in many cases, it would not be altogether absurd if a man were to thank God for his vanity among the other comforts of life.

And now I speak of thanking God, I desire with all humility to acknowledge that I owe the mentioned happiness of my past life to his kind providence, which led me to the means I used and gave them success. My belief of this induces me to *hope*, though I

must not *presume*, that the same goodness will still be exercised toward me, in continuing that happiness, or enabling me to bear a fatal reverse, which I may experience as others have done; the complexion of my future fortune being known to Him only in whose power it is to bless to us even our afflictions.

The notes one of my uncles (who had the same kind of curiosity in collecting family anecdotes) once put into my hands furnished me with several particulars relating to our ancestors. From these notes I learned that the family had lived in the same village, Ecton, in Northamptonshire, for three hundred years, and how much longer he knew not (perhaps from the time when the name of Franklin, that before was the name of an order of people, was assumed by them as a surname when others took surnames all over the kingdom), on a freehold of about thirty acres, aided by the smith's business, which had continued in the family till his time, the eldest son being always bred to that business; a custom which he and my father followed as to their eldest sons. When I searched the registers at Ecton, I found an account of their births, marriages, and burials from the year 1555 only, there being no registers kept in that parish at any time preceding. By that register I perceived that I was the youngest son of the youngest son for five generations back. My grandfather, Thomas, who was born in 1598, lived at Ecton till he grew too old to follow business longer, when he went to live with his son John, a dyer at Banbury, in Oxfordshire, with whom my father served an apprenticeship. There my grandfather died and lies buried. We saw his gravestone in 1758. His eldest son Thomas lived in the house at Ecton, and left it with the land to his only

child, a daughter, who, with her husband, one Fisher, of Wellingborough, sold it to Mr. Isted, now lord of the manor there. My grandfather had four sons that grew up, viz.: Thomas, John, Benjamin, and Josiah. I will give you what account I can of them, at this distance from my papers, and if these are not lost in my absence, you will among them find many more particulars.

Thomas was bred a smith under his father; but, being ingenious, and encouraged in learning (as all my brothers were) by an Esquire Palmer, then the principal gentleman in that parish, he qualified himself for the business of scrivener; became a considerable man in the county; was a chief mover of all public-spirited undertakings for the county or town of Northampton, and his own village, of which many instances were related of him; and much taken notice of and patronized by the then Lord Halifax. He died in 1702, January 6, old style, just four years to a day before I was born. The account we received of his life and character from some old people at Ecton, I remember, struck you as something extraordinary, from its similarity to what you knew of mine. "Had he died on the same day," you said, "one might have supposed a transmigration."

John was bred a dyer, I believe of woolens. Benjamin was bred a silk dyer, serving an apprenticeship at London. He was an ingenious man. I remember him well, for when I was a boy he came over to my father in Boston, and lived in the house with us some years. He lived to a great age. His grandson, Samuel Franklin, now lives in Boston. He left behind him two quarto volumes, MS., of his own poetry, consisting of little occasional pieces addressed to his

friends and relations, of which the following, sent to me, is a specimen.[1] He had formed a short-hand of his own, which he taught me, but, never practicing it, I have now forgot it. I was named after this uncle, there being a particular affection between him and my father. He was very pious, a great attender of sermons of the best preachers, which he took down in his short-hand, and had with him many volumes of them. He was also much of a politician; too much, perhaps, for his station. There fell lately into my hands, in London, a collection he had made of all the principal pamphlets relating to public affairs, from 1641 to 1717; many of the volumes are wanting as appears by the numbering, but there still remain eight volumes in folio, and twenty-four in quarto and in octavo. A dealer in old books met with them, and knowing me by my sometimes buying of him, he brought them to me. It seems my uncle must have left them here when he went to America, which was above fifty years since. There are many of his notes in the margins.

This obscure family of ours was early in the Reformation, and continued Protestants through the reign of Queen Mary, when they were sometimes in danger of trouble on account of their zeal against popery. They had got an English Bible, and to conceal and secure it, it was fastened open with tapes under and within the cover of a joint stool. When my great-great-grandfather read it to his family, he turned up the joint-stool upon his knees, turning over the leaves then under the tapes. One of the children stood at the door to give notice if he saw the apparitor coming, who was an officer of the spiritual court. In that case

[1] Franklin failed to copy the specimen into his Autobiography.

the stool was turned down again upon its feet, when the Bible remained concealed under it as before. This anecdote I had from my uncle Benjamin. The family continued all of the Church of England till about the end of Charles the Second's reign, when some of the ministers that had been outed for nonconformity holding conventicles in Northamptonshire, Benjamin and Josiah adhered to them, and so continued all their lives: the rest of the family remained with the Episcopal Church.

Josiah, my father, married young, and carried his wife with three children into New England, about 1682. The conventicles having been forbidden by law, and frequently disturbed, induced some considerable men of his acquaintance to remove to that country, and he was prevailed with to accompany them thither, where they expected to enjoy their mode of religion with freedom. By the same wife he had four children more born there, and by a second wife ten more, in all seventeen; of which I remember thirteen sitting at one time at his table, who all grew up to be men and women, and married; I was the youngest son, and the youngest child but two, and was born in Boston, New England. My mother, the second wife, was Abiah Folger, daughter of Peter Folger, one of the first settlers of New England, of whom honorable mention is made by Cotton Mather, in his church history of that country, entitled *Magnalia Christi Americana*, as "*a godly, learned Englishman*," if I remember the words rightly. I have heard that he wrote sundry small occasional pieces, but only one of them was printed, which I saw now many years since. It was written in 1675, in the homespun verse of that time and people, and addressed to those then con-

cerned in the government there. It was in favor of liberty of conscience, and in behalf of the Baptists, Quakers, and other sectaries that had been under persecution, ascribing the Indian wars, and other distresses that had befallen the country, to that persecution, as so many judgments of God to punish so heinous an offense, and exhorting a repeal of those uncharitable laws. The whole appeared to me as written with a good deal of decent plainness and manly freedom. The six concluding lines I remember, though I have forgotten the two first of the stanza; but the purport of them was, that his censures proceeded from good-will, and therefore he would be known to be the author.

"Because to be a libeller (says he)
I hate it with my heart;
From Sherburne town, where now I dwell
My name I do put here;
Without offense your real friend,
It is Peter Folgier."

My elder brothers were all put apprentices to different trades. I was put to the grammar-school at eight years of age, my father intending to devote me, as the tithe of his sons, to the service of the Church. My early readiness in learning to read (which must have been very early, as I do not remember when I could not read), and the opinion of all his friends that I should certainly make a good scholar, encouraged him in this purpose of his. My uncle Benjamin, too, approved of it, and proposed to give me all his shorthand volumes of sermons, I suppose as a stock to set up with, if I would learn his character. I continued, however, at the grammar-school not quite one year, though in that time I had risen gradually from the

middle of the class of that year to be the head of it, and farther was removed into the next class above it, in order to go with that into the third at the end of the year. But my father, in the mean time, from a view of the expense of a college education, which having so large a family he could not well afford, and the mean living many so educated were afterwards able to obtain, — reasons that he gave to his friends in my hearing, — altered his first intention, took me from the grammar-school, and sent me to a school for writing and arithmetic, kept by a then famous man, Mr. George Brownell, very successful in his profession generally, and that by mild, encouraging methods. Under him I acquired fair writing pretty soon, but I failed in the arithmetic, and made no progress in it. At ten years old I was taken home to assist my father in his business, which was that of a tallow-chandler and soap-boiler; a business he was not bred to, but had assumed on his arrival in New England, and on finding his dyeing trade would not maintain his family, being in little request. Accordingly, I was employed in cutting wick for the candles, filling the dipping mould and the moulds for cast candles, attending the shop, going of errands, etc.

I disliked the trade, and had a strong inclination for the sea, but my father declared against it; however, living near the water, I was much in and about it, learnt early to swim well, and to manage boats; and when in a boat or canoe with other boys, I was commonly allowed to govern, especially in any case of difficulty; and upon other occasions I was generally a leader among the boys, and sometimes led them into scrapes, of which I will mention one instance, as it shows an early projecting public spirit, though not then justly conducted.

There was a salt marsh that bounded part of the mill pond, on the edge of which, at high water, we used to stand to fish for minnows. By much trampling, we had made it a mere quagmire. My proposal was to build a wharf there fit for us to stand upon, and I showed my comrades a large heap of stones, which were intended for a new house near the marsh, and which would very well suit our purpose. Accordingly, in the evening, when the workmen were gone, I assembled a number of my playfellows, and, working with them diligently, like so many emmets, sometimes two or three to a stone, we brought them all away and built our little wharf. The next morning the workmen were surprised at missing the stones, which were found in our wharf. Inquiry was made after the removers; we were discovered and complained of; several of us were corrected by our fathers; and, though I pleaded the usefulness of the work, mine convinced me that nothing was useful which was not honest.

I think you may like to know something of his person and character. He had an excellent constitution of body, was of middle stature, but well set, and very strong; he was ingenious, could draw prettily, was skilled a little in music, and had a clear, pleasing voice, so that when he played psalm tunes on his violin and sung withal, as he sometimes did in an evening after the business of the day was over, it was extremely agreeable to hear. He had a mechanical genius, too, and, on occasion, was very handy in the use of other tradesmen's tools; but his great excellence lay in a sound understanding and solid judgment in prudential matters, both in private and public affairs. In the latter, indeed, he was never employed, the nu-

merous family he had to educate and the straitness of his circumstances keeping him close to his trade; but I remember well his being frequently visited by leading people, who consulted him for his opinion in affairs of the town or of the church he belonged to, and showed a good deal of respect for his judgment and advice; he was also much consulted by private persons about their affairs when any difficulty occurred, and frequently chosen an arbitrator between contending parties. At his table he liked to have, as often as he could, some sensible friend or neighbor to converse with, and always took care to start some ingenious or useful topic for discourse, which might tend to improve the minds of his children. By this means he turned our attention to what was good, just, and prudent in the conduct of life; and little or no notice was ever taken of what related to the victuals on the table, whether it was well or ill dressed, in or out of season, of good or bad flavor, preferable or inferior to this or that other thing of the kind, so that I was brought up in such a perfect inattention to those matters as to be quite indifferent what kind of food was set before me, and so unobservant of it, that to this day if I am asked I can scarce tell a few hours after dinner what I dined upon. This has been a convenience to me in traveling, where my companions have been sometimes very unhappy for want of a suitable gratification of their more delicate, because better instructed tastes and appetites.

My mother had likewise an excellent constitution; she suckled all her ten children. I never knew either my father or mother to have any sickness but that of which they died, he at 89, and she at 85 years of age. They lie buried together at Boston, where I son

years since placed a marble over their grave, with this inscription:

JOSIAH FRANKLIN,
and
ABIAH his wife,
lie here interred.
They lived lovingly together in wedlock
fifty-five years.
Without an estate, or any gainful employment,
By constant labor and industry,
with God's blessing,
They maintained a large family
comfortably,
and brought up thirteen children
and seven grandchildren
reputably.
From this instance, reader,
Be encouraged to diligence in thy calling,
And distrust not Providence.
He was a pious and prudent man;
She, a discreet and virtuous woman.
Their youngest son,
In filial regard to their memory,
Places this stone.
J. F. born 1655, died 1744, Ætat 89.
A. F. born 1667, died 1752, —— 85.

By my rambling digressions I perceive myself to be grown old. I used to write more methodically. But one does not dress for private company as for a public ball. 'Tis perhaps only negligence.

To return: I continued thus employed in my father's business for two years, that is, till I was twelve years old; and my brother John, who was bred to that business, having left my father, married, and set up for himself at Rhode Island, there was all appearance that I was destined to supply his place, and become a tallow-chandler. But my dislike to the trade

continuing, my father was under apprehensions that if he did not find one for me more agreeable, I should break away and get to sea, as his son Josiah had done, to his great vexation. He therefore sometimes took me to walk with him, and see joiners, bricklayers, turners, braziers, etc., at their work, that he might observe my inclination, and endeavor to fix it on some trade or other on land. It has ever since been a pleasure to me to see good workmen handle their tools, and it has been useful to me, having learned so much by it as to be able to do little jobs myself in my house when a workman could not readily be got, and to construct little machines for my experiments, while the intention of making the experiment was fresh and warm in my mind. My father at last fixed upon the cutler's trade, and my uncle Benjamin's son Samuel, who was bred to that business in London, being about that time established in Boston, I was sent to be with him some time on liking. But his expectations of a fee with me displeasing my father, I was taken home again.

From a child I was fond of reading, and all the little money that came into my hands was ever laid out in books. Pleased with the *Pilgrim's Progress*, my first collection was of John Bunyan's works in separate little volumes. I afterward sold them to enable me to buy R. Burton's *Historical Collections;* they were small chapmen's books, and cheap, forty or fifty in all. My father's little library consisted chiefly of books in polemic divinity, most of which I read, and have since often regretted that, at a time when I had such a thirst for knowledge, more proper books had not fallen in my way, since it was now resolved I should not be a clergyman. Plutarch's *Lives* there

was in which I read abundantly, and I still think that time spent to great advantage. There was also a book of De Foe's, called an *Essay on Projects*, and another of Dr. Mather's, called *Essays to do Good*, which perhaps gave me a turn of thinking that had an influence on some of the principal future events of my life.

This bookish inclination at length determined my father to make me a printer, though he had already one son (James) of that profession. In 1717 my brother James returned from England with a press and letters to set up his business in Boston. I liked it much better than that of my father, but still had a hankering for the sea. To prevent the apprehended effect of such an inclination, my father was impatient to have me bound to my brother. I stood out some time, but at last was persuaded, and signed the indentures when I was yet but twelve years old. I was to serve as an apprentice till I was twenty-one years of age, only I was to be allowed journeyman's wages during the last year. In a little time I made great proficiency in the business, and became a useful hand to my brother. I now had access to better books. An acquaintance with the apprentices of booksellers enabled me sometimes to borrow a small one, which I was careful to return soon and clean. Often I sat up in my room reading the greatest part of the night, when the book was borrowed in the evening and to be returned early in the morning, lest it should be missed or wanted.

And after some time an ingenious tradesman, Mr. Matthew Adams, who had a pretty collection of books, and who frequented our printing-house, took notice of me, invited me to his library, and very kindly lent me such books as I chose to read. I now

took a fancy to poetry, and made some little pieces; my brother, thinking it might turn to account, encouraged me, and put me on composing occasional ballads. One was called *The Lighthouse Tragedy*, and contained an account of the drowning of Captain Worthilake, with his two daughters; the other was a sailor's song, on the taking of Teach (or Blackbeard), the pirate. They were wretched stuff, in the Grub Street ballad style; and when they were printed he sent me about the town to sell them. The first sold wonderfully, the event being recent, having made a great noise. This flattered my vanity; but my father discouraged me by ridiculing my performances, and telling me verse-makers were generally beggars. So I escaped being a poet, most probably a very bad one; but as prose writing has been of great use to me in the course of my life, and was a principal means of my advancement, I shall tell you how, in such a situation, I acquired what little ability I have in that way.

There was another bookish lad in the town, John Collins by name, with whom I was intimately acquainted. We sometimes disputed, and very fond we were of argument, and very desirous of confuting one another, which disputatious turn, by the way, is apt to become a very bad habit, making people often extremely disagreeable in company by the contradiction that is necessary to bring it into practice; and thence, besides souring and spoiling the conversation is productive of disgusts and perhaps enmities where you may have occasion for friendship. I had caught it by reading my father's books of dispute about religion. Persons of good sense, I have since observed seldom fall into it, except lawyers, university men, and men of all sorts that have been bred at Edinburgh.

A question was once, somehow or other, started between Collins and me, of the propriety of educating the female sex in learning, and their abilities for study. He was of opinion that it was improper, and that they were naturally unequal to it. I took the contrary side, perhaps a little for dispute's sake. He was naturally more eloquent, had a ready plenty of words; and sometimes, as I thought, bore me down more by his fluency than by the strength of his reasons. As we parted without settling the point, and were not to see one another again for some time, I sat down to put my arguments in writing, which I copied fair and sent to him. He answered, and I replied. Three or four letters of a side had passed, when my father happened to find my papers and read them. Without entering into the discussion, he took occasion to talk to me about the manner of my writing; observed that, though I had the advantage of my antagonist in correct spelling and pointing (which I owed to the printing-house), I fell far short in elegance of expression, in method, and in perspicuity, of which he convinced me by several instances. I saw the justice of his remarks, and thence grew more attentive to the manner in writing, and determined to endeavor at improvement.

About this time I met with an odd volume of the *Spectator*. It was the third. I had never before seen any of them. I bought it, read it over and over, and was much delighted with it. I thought the writing excellent, and wished, if possible, to imitate it. With this view I took some of the papers, and making short hints of the sentiment in each sentence, laid them by a few days, and then, without looking at the book, tried to complete the papers again, by express-

ing each hinted sentiment at length, and as fully as it had been expressed before, in any suitable words that should come to hand. Then I compared my *Spectator* with the original, discovered some of my faults, and corrected them. But I found I wanted a stock of words, or a readiness in recollecting and using them, which I thought I should have acquired before that time if I had gone on making verses; since the continual occasion for words of the same import, but of different length, to suit the measure, or of different sound for the rhyme, would have laid me under a constant necessity of searching for variety, and also have tended to fix that variety in my mind, and make me master of it. Therefore I took some of the tales and turned them into verse; and, after a time, when I had pretty well forgotten the prose, turned them back again. I also sometimes jumbled my collections of hints into confusion, and after some weeks endeavored to reduce them into the best order, before I began to form the full sentences and complete the paper. This was to teach me method in the arrangement of thoughts. By comparing my work afterwards with the original, I discovered many faults and amended them; but I sometimes had the pleasure of fancying that, in certain particulars of small import, I had been lucky enough to improve the method or the language, and this encouraged me to think I might possibly in time come to be a tolerable English writer, of which I was extremely ambitious. My time for these exercises and for reading was at night, after work, or before it began in the morning, or on Sundays, when I contrived to be in the printing-house alone, evading as much as I could the common attendance on public worship which my father used to exact of me when I

was under his care, and which indeed I still thought a duty, though I could not, as it seemed to me, afford time to practice it.

When about sixteen years of age I happened to meet with a book, written by one Tryon, recommending a vegetable diet. I determined to go into it. My brother, being yet unmarried, did not keep house, but boarded himself and his apprentices in another family. My refusing to eat flesh occasioned an inconveniency, and I was frequently chid for my singularity. I made myself acquainted with Tryon's manner of preparing some of his dishes, such as boiling potatoes or rice, making hasty pudding, and a few others, and then proposed to my brother that if he would give me, weekly, half the money he paid for my board, I would board myself. He instantly agreed to it and I presently found that I could save half what he paid me. This was an additional fund for buying books. But I had another advantage in it. My brother and the rest going from the printing-house to their meals, I remained there alone, and dispatching presently my light repast, which often was no more than a biscuit or a slice of bread, a handful of raisins or a tart from the pastry-cook's, and a glass of water, had the rest of the time till their return for study, in which I made the greater progress, from that greater clearness of head and quicker apprehension which usually attend temperance in eating and drinking.

And now it was that, being on some occasion made ashamed of my ignorance in figures, which I had twice failed in learning when at school, I took Cocker's book of Arithmetic, and went through the whole by myself with great ease. I also read Seller's and Shermy's books of Navigation, and became ac-

quainted with the little geometry they contain; but never proceeded far in that science. And I read about this time Locke *On Human Understanding*, and the *Art of Thinking*, by Messrs. du Port Royal.

While I was intent on improving my language, I met with an English Grammar (I think it was Greenwood's), at the end of which there were two little sketches of the arts of rhetoric and logic, the latter finishing with a specimen of a dispute in the Socratic method; and soon after I procured Xenophon's *Memorable Things of Socrates*, wherein there are many instances of the same method. I was charmed with it, adopted it, dropped my abrupt contradiction and positive argumentation, and put on the humble inquirer and doubter. And being then, from reading Shaftesbury and Collins, become a real doubter in many points of our religious doctrine, I found this method safest for myself and very embarrassing to those against whom I used it; therefore I took a delight in it, practiced it continually, and grew very artful and expert in drawing people, even of superior knowledge, into concessions, the consequences of which they did not foresee, entangling them in difficulties out of which they could not extricate themselves, and so obtaining victories that neither myself nor my cause always deserved. I continued this method some few years, but gradually left it, retaining only the habit of expressing myself in terms of modest diffidence; never using, when I advanced anything that may possibly be disputed, the words *certainly*, *undoubtedly*, or any others that give the air of positiveness to an opinion; but rather say, I conceive or apprehend a thing to be so and so; it appears to me, or *I should think it so or so*, for such and such reasons:

or *I imagine it to be so;* or *it is so if I am not mistaken.* This habit, I believe, has been of great advantage to me when I have had occasion to inculcate my opinions, and persuade men into measures that I have been from time to time engaged in promoting; and as the chief ends of conversation are to *inform* or to be *informed*, to *please* or to *persuade*, I wish well-meaning, sensible men would not lessen their power of doing good by a positive, assuming manner, that seldom fails to disgust, tends to create opposition, and to defeat every one of those purposes for which speech was given to us, to wit, giving or receiving information or pleasure. For if you would inform, a positive and dogmatical manner in advancing your sentiments may provoke contradiction and prevent a candid attention. If you wish information and improvement from the knowledge of others, and yet at the same time express yourself as firmly fixed in your present opinions, modest, sensible men who do not love disputation will probably leave you undisturbed in the possession of your error. And by such a manner you can seldom hope to recommend yourself in *pleasing* your hearers, or to persuade those whose concurrence you desire. Pope says, judiciously:

> "Men should be taught as if you taught them not,
> And things unknown propos'd as things forgot;"

farther recommending to us

> "To speak, tho' sure, with seeming diffidence."

And he might have coupled with this line that which he has coupled with another, I think less properly,

> "For want of modesty is want of sense."

If you ask, Why less properly? I must repeat the lines,

> "Immodest words admit of no defense,
> For want of modesty is want of sense."

Now, is not *want of sense* (where a man is so unfortunate as to want it) some apology for his *want of modesty?* and would not the lines stand more justly thus:

> "Immodest words admit *but* this defense,
> That want of modesty is want of sense."

This, however, I should submit to better judgments.

My brother had, in 1720 or 1721, begun to print a newspaper. It was the second that appeared in America, and was called the *New England Courant.* The only one before it was the *Boston News-Letter.* I remember his being dissuaded by some of his friends from the undertaking, as not likely to succeed, one newspaper being, in their judgment, enough for America. At this time (1771) there are not less than five-and-twenty. He went on, however, with the undertaking, and after having worked in composing the types and printing off the sheets, I was employed to carry the papers through the streets to the customers.

He had some ingenious men among his friends, who amused themselves by writing little pieces for this paper, which gained it credit and made it more in demand, and these gentlemen often visited us. Hearing their conversations, and their accounts of the approbation their papers were received with, I was excited to try my hand among them; but being still a boy, and suspecting that my brother would object to printing anything of mine in his paper if he knew it to be

mine, I contrived to disguise my hand, and writing an anonymous paper, I put it in at night under the door of the printing-house. It was found in the morning, and communicated to his writing friends when they called in as usual. They read it, commented on it in my hearing, and I had the exquisite pleasure of finding it met with their approbation, and that in their different guesses at the author, none were named but men of some character among us for learning and ingenuity. I suppose now that I was rather lucky in my judges, and that perhaps they were not really so very good ones as I then esteemed them.

Encouraged, however, by this, I wrote and conveyed in the same way to the press several more papers which were equally approved; and I kept my secret till my small fund of sense for such performances was pretty well exhausted, and then I discovered it, when I began to be considered a little more by my brother's acquaintance, and in a manner that did not quite please him, as he thought, probably with reason, that it tended to make me too vain. And, perhaps, this might be one occasion of the differences that we began to have about this time. Though a brother, he considered himself as my master, and me as his apprentice, and, accordingly, expected the same services from me as he would from another, while I thought he demeaned me too much in some he required of me, who from a brother expected more indulgence. Our disputes were often brought before our father, and I fancy I was either generally in the right, or else a better pleader, because the judgment was generally in my favor. But my brother was passionate, and had often beaten me, which I took extremely amiss; and, thinking my apprenticeship very tedious, I was con-

tinually wishing for some opportunity of shortening it, which at length offered in a manner unexpected.[1]

One of the pieces in our newspaper on some political point, which I have now forgotten, gave offence to the Assembly. He was taken up, censured, and imprisoned for a month, by the speaker's warrant, I suppose, because he would not discover his author. I too was taken up and examined before the council; but, though I did not give them any satisfaction, they contented themselves with admonishing me, and dismissed me, considering me, perhaps, as an apprentice, who was bound to keep his master's secrets.

During my brother's confinement, which I resented a good deal, notwithstanding our private differences, I had the management of the paper; and I made bold to give our rulers some rubs in it, which my brother took very kindly, while others began to consider me in an unfavorable light, as a young genius that had a turn for libelling and satire. My brother's discharge was accompanied with an order of the House (a very odd one), that "*James Franklin should no longer print the paper called the New England Courant.*"

There was a consultation held in our printing-house among his friends, what he should do in this case. Some proposed to evade the order by changing the name of the paper; but my brother, seeing inconveniences in that, it was finally concluded on as a better way, to let it be printed for the future under the name of BENJAMIN FRANKLIN; and to avoid the censure of the Assembly, that might fall on him as still printing it by his apprentice, the contrivance was that my old

[1] I fancy his harsh and tyrannical treatment of me might be a means of impressing me with that aversion to arbitrary power that has stuck to me through my whole life. B. F.

indenture should be returned to me, with a full discharge on the back of it, to be shown on occasion, but to secure to him the benefit of my service, I was to sign new indentures for the remainder of the term, which were to be kept private. A very flimsy scheme it was; however, it was immediately executed, and the paper went on accordingly, under my name for several months.

At length, a fresh difference arising between my brother and me, I took upon me to assert my freedom, presuming that he would not venture to produce the new indentures. It was not fair in me to take this advantage, and this I therefore reckon one of the first errata of my life; but the unfairness of it weighed little with me, when under the impressions of resentment for the blows his passion too often urged him to bestow upon me, though he was otherwise not an ill-natured man: perhaps I was too saucy and provoking.

When he found I would leave him, he took care to prevent my getting employment in any other printing-house of the town, by going round and speaking to every master, who accordingly refused to give me work. I then thought of going to New York, as the nearest place where there was a printer; and I was rather inclined to leave Boston when I reflected that I had already made myself a little obnoxious to the governing party, and from the arbitrary proceedings of the Assembly in my brother's case, it was likely I might, if I stayed, soon bring myself into scrapes; and further, that my indiscreet disputations about religion began to make me pointed at with horror by good people as an infidel or atheist. I determined on the point, but my father now siding with my brother,

I was sensible that if I attempted to go openly, means would be used to prevent me. My friend Collins, therefore, undertook to manage a little for me. He agreed with the captain of a New York sloop for my passage under the notion of my being a young acquaintance of his [that had gotten himself into trouble]. So I sold some of my books to raise a little money, was taken on board privately, and as we had a fair wind, in three days I found myself in New York, near 300 miles from home, a boy of but 17, without the least recommendation to, or knowledge of, any person in the place, and with very little money in my pocket.

II

SEEKING HIS FORTUNE

My inclinations for the sea were by this time worn out, or I might now have gratified them. But, having a trade, and supposing myself a pretty good workman, I offered my service to the printer in the place, old Mr. William Bradford, who had been the first printer in Pennsylvania, but removed from thence upon the quarrel of George Keith. He could give me no employment, having little to do, and help enough already; but says he, "My son at Philadelphia has lately lost his principal hand, Aquila Rose, by death; if you go thither, I believe he may employ you." Philadelphia was a hundred miles further; I set out, however, in a boat for Amboy, leaving my chest and things to follow me round by sea.

In crossing the bay, we met with a squall that tore our rotten sails to pieces, prevented our getting into the Kill, and drove us upon Long Island. In our way, a drunken Dutchman, who was a passenger too, fell overboard; when he was sinking, I reached through the water to his shock pate, and drew him up, so that we got him in again. His ducking sobered him a little, and he went to sleep, taking first out of his pocket a book, which he desired I would dry for him. It proved to be my old favorite author, Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*, in Dutch, finely printed on good paper, with copper cuts, a dress better than I had ever seen it wear in its own language. I have since found that it has been translated into most of the languages of Europe, and suppose it has been more generally

read than any other book, except perhaps the Bible. Honest John was the first that I know of who mixed narration and dialogue; a method of writing very engaging to the reader, who in the most interesting parts finds himself, as it were, brought into the company and present at the discourse. De Foe in his *Crusoe*, his *Moll Flanders*, *Religious Courtship*, *Family Instructor*, and other pieces, has imitated it with success, and Richardson has done the same in his *Pamela*, etc.

When we drew near the island, we found it was at a place where there could be no landing, there being a great surf on the stony beach. So we dropped anchor, and swung round towards the shore. Some people came down to the water edge and hallooed to us, as we did to them; but the wind was so high, and the surf so loud, that we could not hear so as to understand each other. There were canoes on the shore, and we made signs, and hallooed that they should fetch us; but they either did not understand us, or thought it impracticable, so they went away, and night coming on, we had no remedy but to wait till the wind should abate; and, in the mean time, the boatman and I concluded to sleep, if we could; and so crowded into the scuttle, with the Dutchman, who was still wet; and the spray beating over the head of our boat, leaked through to us, so that we were soon almost as wet as he. In this manner we lay all night, with very little rest; but the wind abating the next day, we made a shift to reach Amboy before night, having been thirty hours on the water, without victuals, or any drink but a bottle of filthy rum, the water we sailed on being salt.

In the evening I found myself very feverish, and

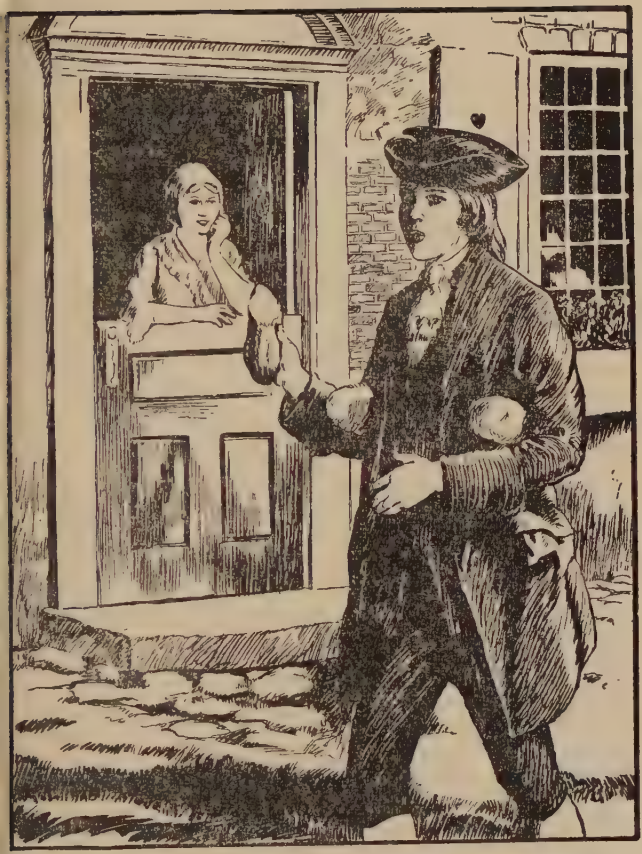
went in to bed; but having read somewhere that cold water drank plentifully was good for a fever, I followed the prescription, sweat plentifully most of the night, my fever left me, and in the morning, crossing the ferry, I proceeded on my journey on foot, having fifty miles to Burlington, where I was told I should find boats that would carry me the rest of the way to Philadelphia.

It rained very hard all the day; I was thoroughly soaked, and by noon a good deal tired; so I stopped at a poor inn, where I stayed all night, beginning now to wish that I had never left home. I cut so miserable a figure, too, that I found, by the questions asked me, I was suspected to be some runaway servant, and in danger of being taken up on that suspicion. However, I proceeded the next day, and got in the evening to an inn, within eight or ten miles of Burlington, kept by one Dr. Brown. He entered into conversation with me while I took some refreshment, and, finding I had read a little, became very sociable and friendly. Our acquaintance continued as long as he lived. He had been, I imagine, an itinerant doctor, for there was no town in England, or country in Europe, of which he could not give a very particular account. He had some letters, and was ingenious, but much of an unbeliever, and wickedly undertook, some years after, to travesty the Bible in doggerel verse, as Cotton had done Virgil. By this means he set many of the facts in a very ridiculous light, and might have hurt weak minds if his work had been published; but it never was.

At his house I lay that night, and the next morning reached Burlington, but had the mortification to find that the regular boats were gone a little before my

coming, and no other expected to go before Tuesday, this being Saturday; wherefore I returned to an old woman in the town, of whom I had bought gingerbread to eat on the water, and asked her advice. She invited me to lodge at her house till a passage by water should offer; and being tired with my foot traveling, I accepted the invitation. She, understanding I was a printer, would have had me stay at that town and follow my business, being ignorant of the stock necessary to begin with. She was very hospitable, gave me a dinner of ox-cheek with great good-will, accepting only of a pot of ale in return; and I thought myself fixed till Tuesday should come. However, walking in the evening by the side of the river, a boat came by, which I found was going towards Philadelphia, with several people in her. They took me in, and, as there was no wind, we rowed all the way; and about midnight, not having yet seen the city, some of the company were confident we must have passed it, and would row no farther; the others knew not where we were; so we put toward the shore, got into a creek, landed near an old fence, with the rails of which we made a fire, the night being cold, in October, and there we remained till daylight. Then one of the company knew the place to be Cooper's Creek, a little above Philadelphia, which we saw as soon as we got out of the creek, and arrived there about eight or nine o'clock on the Sunday morning, and landed at the Market Street wharf.

I have been the more particular in this description of my journey, and shall be so of my first entry into that city, that you may in your mind compare such unlikely beginnings with the figure I have since made there. I was in my working-dress, my best clothes



"I WALKED OFF WITH A ROLL UNDER EACH ARM"

being to come round by sea. I was dirty from my journey; my pockets were stuffed out with shirts and stockings, and I knew no soul nor where to look for lodging. I was fatigued with traveling, rowing, and want of rest, I was very hungry; and my whole stock of cash consisted of a Dutch dollar, and about a shilling in copper. The latter I gave the people of the boat for my passage, who at first refused it on account of my rowing; but I insisted on their taking it. A man being sometimes more generous when he has but a little money than when he has plenty, perhaps through fear of being thought to have but little.

Then I walked up the street, gazing about till near the market-house I met a boy with bread. I had made many a meal on bread, and inquiring where he got it, I went immediately o the baker's he directed me to, in Second Street, and asked for biscuit, intending such as we had in Boston; but they, it seems, were not made in Philadelphia. Then I asked for a three-penny loaf, and was told they had none such. So not considering or knowing the difference of money, and the greater cheapness nor the names of his bread, I bade him give me three-penny worth of any sort. He gave me, accordingly, three great puffy rolls. I was surprised at the quantity, but took it, and having no room in my pockets, walked off with a roll under each arm, and eating the other. Thus I went up Market Street as far as Fourth Street, passing by the door of Mr. Read, my future wife's father; when she, standing at the door, saw me, and thought I made, as I certainly did, a most awkward, ridiculous appearance. Then I turned and went down Chestnut Street and part of Walnut Street, eating my roll all the way, and coming round, found myself again at Market

Street wharf, near the boat I came in, to which I went for a draught of the river water; and being filled with one of my rolls, gave the other two to a woman and her child that came down the river in the boat with us, and were waiting to go farther.

Thus refreshed, I walked again up the street, which by this time had many clean-dressed people in it, who were all walking the same way. I joined them, and thereby was led into the great meeting-house of the Quakers near the market. I sat down among them, and after looking round a while and hearing nothing said, being very drowsy through labor and want of rest the preceding night, I fell fast asleep, and continued so till the meeting broke up, when one was kind enough to rouse me. This was, therefore, the first house I was in or slept in, in Philadelphia.

Walking down again toward the river, and looking in the faces of people, I met a young Quaker man, whose countenance I liked, and, accosting him, requested he would tell me where a stranger could get lodging. We were then near the sign of the Three Mariners. "Here," says he, "is one place that entertains strangers, but it is not a reputable house; if thee wilt walk with me, I'll show thee a better." He brought me to the Crooked Billet in Water Street. Here I got a dinner; and while I was eating it, several sly questions were asked me, as it seemed to be suspected from my youth and appearance that I might be some runaway.

After dinner, my sleepiness returned, and being shown to a bed, I lay down without undressing, and slept till six in the evening, was called to supper, went to bed again very early, and slept soundly till next morning. Then I made myself as tidy as I could, and

went to Andrew Bradford the printer's. I found in the shop the old man his father, whom I had seen at New York, and who, traveling on horseback, had got to Philadelphia before me. He introduced me to his son, who received me civilly, gave me a breakfast, but told me he did not at present want a hand, being lately supplied with one; but there was another printer in town, lately set up, one Keimer, who, perhaps, might employ me; if not, I should be welcome to lodge at his house, and he would give me a little work to do now and then till fuller business should offer.

The old gentleman said he would go with me to the new printer; and when we found him, "Neighbor," says Bradford, "I have brought to see you a young man of your business; perhaps you may want such a one." He asked me a few questions, put a composing stick in my hand to see how I worked, and then said he would employ me soon, though he had just then nothing for me to do; and taking old Bradford, whom he had never seen before, to be one of the town's people that had a good will for him, entered into a conversation on his present undertaking and prospects; while Bradford, not discovering that he was the other printer's father, on Keimer's saying he expected soon to get the greatest part of the business into his own hands, drew him on by artful questions, and starting little doubts, to explain all his views, what interests he relied on, and in what manner he intended to proceed. I, who stood by and heard all, saw immediately that one of them was a crafty old sophister, and the other a mere novice. Bradford left me with Keimer, who was greatly surprised when I told him who the old man was.

Keimer's printing-house, I found, consisted of an old shattered press, and one small, worn-out font of English, which he was then using himself, composing an Elegy on Aquila Rose, before mentioned, an ingenious young man, of excellent character, much respected in the town, clerk of the Assembly, and a pretty poet. Keimer made verses too, but very indifferently. He could not be said to write them, for his manner was to compose them in the types directly out of his head. So there being no copy, but one pair of cases, and the Elegy likely to require all the letters, no one could help him. I endeavored to put his press (which he had not yet used, and of which he understood nothing) into order fit to be worked with; and promising to come and print off his Elegy as soon as he should have got it ready, I returned to Bradford's, who gave me a little job to do for the present, and there I lodged and dieted. A few days after, Keimer sent for me to print off the Elegy. And now he had got another pair of cases, and a pamphlet to reprint, on which he set me to work.

These two printers I found poorly qualified for their business. Bradford had not been bred to it, and was very illiterate; and Keimer, though something of a scholar, was a mere compositor knowing nothing of presswork. He had been one of the French prophets, and could act their enthusiastic agitations. At this time he did not profess any particular religion, but something of all on occasion; was very ignorant of the world, and had, as I afterward found, a good deal of the knave in his composition. He did not like my lodging at Bradford's while I worked with him. He had a house indeed, but without furniture, so he could not lodge me; but he got me a lodging at Mr. Read's

before mentioned, who was the owner of his house; and my chest and clothes being come by this time, I made rather a more respectable appearance in the eyes of Miss Read than I had done when she first happened to see me eating my roll in the street.

I began now to have some acquaintance among the young people of the town that were lovers of reading, with whom I spent my evenings very pleasantly; and gaining money by my industry and frugality, I lived very agreeably, forgetting Boston as much as I could, and not desiring that any there should know where I resided except my friend Collins, who was in my secret, and kept it when I wrote to him. At length, an incident happened that sent me back again much sooner than I had intended. I had a brother-in-law, Robert Holmes, master of a sloop that traded between Boston and Delaware. He being at Newcastle, forty miles below Philadelphia, heard there of me, and wrote me a letter mentioning the concern of my friends in Boston at my abrupt departure, assuring me of their good-will to me, and that everything would be accommodated to my mind if I would return, to which he exhorted me very earnestly. I wrote an answer to his letter, thanked him for his advice, but stated my reasons for quitting Boston fully and in such a light as to convince him I was not so wrong as he had apprehended.

Sir William Keith, governor of the province, was then at Newcastle, and Captain Holmes, happening to be in company with him when my letter came to hand, spoke to him of me, and showed him the letter. The governor read it, and seemed surprised when he was told my age. He said I appeared a young man of promising parts, and therefore should be encouraged;

the printers at Philadelphia were wretched ones; and, if I would set up there, he made no doubt I should succeed; for his part, he would procure me the public business, and do me every other service in his power. This my brother-in-law afterwards told me in Boston, but I knew as yet nothing of it; when, one day, Keimer and I being at work together near the window, we saw the governor and another gentleman (which proved to be Colonel French of Newcastle), finely dressed, come directly across the street to our house, and heard them at the door.

Keimer ran down immediately, thinking it a visit to him; but the governor inquired for me, came up, and with a condescension and politeness I had been quite unused to made me many compliments, desired to be acquainted with me, blamed me kindly for not having made myself known to him when I first came to the place, and would have me away with him to the tavern, where he was going with Colonel French to taste, as he said, some excellent Madeira. I was not a little surprised, and Keimer stared like a pig poisoned. I went, however, with the governor and Colonel French to a tavern, at the corner of Third Street, and over the Madeira he proposed my setting up my business, laid before me the probabilities of success, and both he and Colonel French assured me I should have their interest and influence in procuring the public business of both governments. On my doubting whether my father would assist me in it, Sir William said he would give me a letter to him, in which he would state the advantages, and he did not doubt of prevailing with him. So it was concluded I should return to Boston in the first vessel, with the governor's letter recommending me to my father. In the

mean time the intention was to be kept a secret, and I went on working with Keimer as usual, the governor sending for me now and then to dine with him, a very great honor I thought it, and conversing with me in the most affable, familiar, and friendly manner imaginable.

About the end of April, 1724, a little vessel offered for Boston. I took leave of Keimer as going to see my friends. The governor gave me an ample letter, saying many flattering things of me to my father, and strongly recommending the project of my setting up at Philadelphia as a thing that must make my fortune. We struck on a shoal in going down the bay, and sprung a leak; we had a blustering time at sea, and were obliged to pump almost continually, at which I took my turn. We arrived safe, however, at Boston in about a fortnight. I had been absent seven months, and my friends had heard nothing of me; for my brother Holmes was not yet returned, and had not written about me. My unexpected appearance surprised the family; all were, however, very glad to see me, and made me welcome, except my brother. I went to see him at his printing-house. I was better dressed than ever while in his service, having a genteel new suit from head to foot, a watch, and my pockets lined with near five pounds sterling in silver. He received me not very frankly, looked me all over, and turned to his work again.

The journeymen were inquisitive where I had been, what sort of a country it was, and how I liked it. I praised it much, and the happy life I led in it; expressing strongly my intention of returning to it; and one of them asking what kind of money we had there, I produced a handful of silver, and spread it before

them, which was a kind of rare show they had not been used to, paper being the money of Boston. Then I took an opportunity of letting them see my watch; and, lastly (my brother still grum and sullen), I gave them a piece of eight to drink, and took my leave. This visit of mine offended him extremely; for, when my mother some time after spoke to him of a reconciliation, and of her wishes to see us on good terms together, and that we might live for the future as brothers, he said I had insulted him in such a manner before his people that he could never forget or forgive it. In this, however, he was mistaken.

My father received the governor's letter with some apparent surprise, but said little of it to me for some days, when Captain Holmes returning he showed it to him, asked him if he knew Keith, and what kind of man he was; adding his opinion that he must be of small discretion to think of setting a boy up in business who wanted yet three years of being at man's estate. Holmes said what he could in favor of the project, but my father was clear in the impropriety of it, and at last gave a flat denial to it. Then he wrote a civil letter to Sir William, thanking him for the patronage he had so kindly offered me, but declining to assist me as yet in setting up, I being, in his opinion, too young to be trusted with the management of a business so important, and for which the preparation must be so expensive.

My friend and companion Collins, who was a clerk in the post-office, pleased with the account I gave him of my new country, determined to go thither also; and, while I waited for my father's determination, he set out before me by land to Rhode Island, leaving his books, which were a pretty collection of mathe-

matics and natural philosophy, to come with mine and me to New York, where he proposed to wait for me.

My father, though he did not approve Sir William's proposition, was yet pleased that I had been able to obtain so advantageous a character from a person of such note where I had resided, and that I had been so industrious and careful as to equip myself so handsomely in so short a time; therefore, seeing no prospect of an accommodation between my brother and me, he gave his consent to my returning again to Philadelphia, advised me to behave respectfully to the people there, endeavor to obtain the general esteem, and avoid lampooning and libelling, to which he thought I had too much inclination; telling me, that by steady industry and a prudent parsimony I might save enough by the time I was one-and-twenty to set me up; and that, if I came near the matter, he would help me out with the rest. This was all I could obtain, except some small gifts as tokens of his and my mother's love, when I embarked again for New York, now with their approbation and their blessing.

The sloop putting in at Newport, Rhode Island, I visited my brother John, who had been married and settled there some years. He received me very affectionately, for he always loved me. A friend of his, one Vernon, having some money due to him in Pennsylvania, about thirty-five pounds currency, desired I would receive it for him, and keep it till I had his directions what to remit it in. Accordingly, he gave me an order. This afterwards occasioned me a good deal of uneasiness.

At Newport we took in a number of passengers for New York, among which were two young women, com-

panions, and a grave, sensible, matron-like Quaker woman, with her attendants. I had shown an obliging readiness to do her some little services, which impressed her I suppose with a degree of good-will toward me; therefore, when she saw a daily growing familiarity between me and the two young women, which they appeared to encourage, she took me aside, and said, "Young man, I am concerned for thee, as thou has no friend with thee, and seems not to know much of the world, or of the snares youth is exposed to; depend upon it, those are very bad women; I can see it in all their actions; and if thee art not upon thy guard, they will draw thee into some danger; they are strangers to thee, and I advise thee, in a friendly concern for thy welfare, to have no acquaintance with them." As I seemed at first not to think so ill of them as she did, she mentioned some things she had observed and heard that had escaped my notice, but now convinced me she was right. I thanked her for her kind advice, and promised to follow it. When we arrived at New York, they told me where they lived, and invited me to come and see them; but I avoided it, and it was well I did; for the next day the captain missed a silver spoon and some other things, that had been taken out of his cabin, and . . . he got a warrant to search their lodgings, found the stolen goods, and had the thieves punished. So, though we had escaped a sunken rock, which we scraped upon in the passage, I thought this escape of rather more importance to me.

At New York I found my friend Collins, who had arrived there some time before me. We had been intimate from children, and had read the same books together; but he had the advantage of more time for

reading and studying, and a wonderful genius for mathematical learning, in which he far outstripped me. While I lived in Boston, most of my hours of leisure for conversation were spent with him, and he continued a sober as well as an industrious lad; was much respected for his learning by several of the clergy and other gentlemen, and seemed to promise making a good figure in life. But, during my absence, he had acquired a habit of sotting with brandy; and I found by his own account, and what I heard from others, that he had been drunk every day since his arrival at New York, and behaved very oddly. He had gamed, too, and lost his money, so that I was obliged to discharge his lodgings, and defray his expenses to and at Philadelphia, which proved extremely inconvenient to me.

The then governor of New York, Burnet (son of Bishop Burnet), hearing from the captain that a young man, one of his passengers, had a great many books, desired he would bring me to see him. I waited upon him accordingly, and should have taken Collins with me but that he was not sober. The governor treated me with great civility, showed me his library, which was a very large one, and we had a good deal of conversation about books and authors. This was the second governor who had done me the honor to take notice of me; which, to a poor boy like me, was very pleasing.

We proceeded to Philadelphia. I received on the way Vernon's money, without which we could hardly have finished our journey. Collins wished to be employed in some counting-house; but, whether they discovered his dramming by his breath, or by his behavior, though he had some recommendations, he

met with no success in any application, and continued lodging and boarding at the same house with me, and at my expense. Knowing I had that money of Vernon's he was continually borrowing of me, still promising repayment as soon as he should be in business. At length he had got so much of it that I was distressed to think what I should do in case of being called on to remit it.

His drinking continued, about which we sometimes quarrelled; for, when a little intoxicated, he was very fractious. Once, in a boat on the Delaware with some other young men, he refused to row in his turn. "I will be rowed home," says he. "We will not row you," says I. "You must, or stay all night on the water," says he, "just as you please." The others said, "Let us row; what signifies it?" But, my mind being soured with his other conduct, I continued to refuse. So he swore he would make me row, or throw me overboard; and coming along, stepping on the thwarts, toward me, when he came up and struck at me, I clapped my hand under his crotch, and, rising, pitched him head-foremost into the river. I knew he was a good swimmer, and so was under little concern about him; but before he could get round to lay hold of the boat, we had with a few strokes pulled him out of his reach; and ever when he drew near the boat, we asked if he would row, striking a few strokes to slide her away from him. He was ready to die with vexation, and obstinately would not promise to row. However, seeing him at last beginning to tire, we lifted him in and brought him home dripping wet in the evening. We hardly exchanged a civil word afterwards, and a West India captain, who had a commission to procure a tutor for the sons of a gen-

tleman at Barbadoes, happening to meet with him, agreed to carry him thither. He left me then, promising to remit me the first money he should receive in order to discharge the debt; but I never heard of him after.

The breaking into this money of Vernon's was one of the first great errata of my life; and this affair showed that my father was not much out in his judgment when he supposed me too young to manage business of importance. But Sir William, on reading his letter, said he was too prudent. There was great difference in persons; and discretion did not always accompany years, nor was youth always without it. "And since he will not set you up," says he, "I will do it myself. Give me an inventory of the things necessary to be had from England, and I will send for them. You shall repay me when you are able; I am resolved to have a good printer here, and I am sure you must succeed." This was spoken with such an appearance of cordiality that I had not the least doubt of his meaning what he said. I had hitherto kept the proposition of my setting up a secret in Philadelphia, and I still kept it. Had it been known that I depended on the governor, probably some friend, that knew him better, would have advised me not to rely on him, as I afterwards heard it as his known character to be liberal of promises which he never meant to keep. Yet, unsolicited as he was by me, how could I think his generous offers insincere? I believed him one of the best men in the world.

I presented him an inventory of a little printing-house, amounting by my computation to about one hundred pounds sterling. He liked it, but asked me if my being on the spot in England to choose the

types, and see that everything was good of the kind, might not be of some advantage. "Then," says he, "when there, you may make acquaintances, and establish correspondences in the book-selling and stationery way." I agreed that this might be advantageous. "Then," says he, "get yourself ready to go with Annis," which was the annual ship, and the only one at that time usually passing between London and Philadelphia. But it would be some months before Annis sailed, so I continued working with Keimer, fretting about the money Collins had got from me, and in daily apprehensions of being called upon by Vernon, which, however, did not happen for some years after.

I believe I have omitted mentioning that, in my first voyage from Boston, being becalmed off Block Island, our people set about catching cod, and hauled up a great many. Hitherto I had stuck to my resolution of not eating animal food, and on this occasion I considered, with my master Tryon, the taking every fish as a kind of unprovoked murder, since none of them had, or ever could do us any injury that might justify the slaughter. All this seemed very reasonable. But I had formerly been a great lover of fish and, when this came hot out of the frying-pan, it smelt admirably well. I balanced some time between principle and inclination, till I recollected that, when the fish were opened, I saw smaller fish taken out of their stomachs; then thought I, "If you eat one another, I don't see why we mayn't eat you." So I dined upon cod very heartily, and continued to eat with other people, returning only now and then occasionally to a vegetable diet. So convenient a thing it is to be a *reasonable creature*, since it enables one to

find or make a reason for everything one has a mind to do.

Keimer and I lived on a pretty good familiar footing, and agreed tolerably well, for he suspected nothing of my setting up. He retained a great deal of his old enthusiasm and loved argumentation. We therefore had many disputations. I used to work him so with my Socratic method, and trepanned him so often by questions apparently so distant from any point we had in hand, and yet by degrees led to the point, and brought him into difficulties and contradictions, that at last he grew ridiculously cautious, and would hardly answer me the most common question, without asking first, "*What do you intend to infer from that?*" However, it gave him so high an opinion of my abilities in the confuting way, that he seriously proposed my being his colleague in a project he had of setting up a new sect. He was to preach the doctrines, and I was to confound all opponents. When he came to explain with me upon the doctrines, I found several conundrums which I objected to, unless I might have my way a little too, and introduce some of mine.

Keimer wore his beard at full length, because somewhere in the Mosaic law it is said, "*Thou shalt not mar the corners of thy beard.*" He likewise kept the Seventh day, Sabbath; and these two points were essentials with him. I disliked both; but agreed to admit them upon condition of his adopting the doctrine of using no animal food. "I doubt," said he, "my constitution will not bear that." I assured him it would, and that he would be the better for it. He was usually a great glutton, and I promised myself some diversion in half starving him. He agreed to

try the practice, if I would keep him company. I did so, and we held it for three months. We had our victuals dressed, and brought to us regularly by a woman in the neighborhood, who had from me a list of forty dishes, to be prepared for us at different times, in all of which there was neither fish, flesh, nor fowl, and the whim suited me the better at this time from the cheapness of it, not costing us above eighteen pence sterling each per week. I have since kept several Lents most strictly, leaving the common diet for that and that for the common, abruptly without the least inconvenience, so that I think that there is little in the advice of making those changes by easy gradations. I went on pleasantly, but poor Keimer suffered grievously, tired of the project, longed for the flesh-pots of Egypt, and ordered a roast pig. He invited me and two women friends to dine with him; but, it being too soon upon the table, he could not resist the temptation, and ate the whole before we came.

I had made some courtship during this time to Miss Read. I had a great respect and affection for her, and had some reason to believe she had the same for me; but as I was about to take a long voyage, and we were both very young, only a little above eighteen, it was thought most prudent by her mother to prevent our going too far at present, as a marriage, if it was to take place, would be more convenient after my return, when I should be, as I expected, set up in my business. Perhaps, too, she thought my expectations not so well founded as I imagined them to be.

My chief acquaintances at this time were Charles Osborne, Joseph Watson, and James Ralph, all lovers of reading. The two first were clerks to an eminen

scrivener or conveyancer in the town, Charles Brogden; the other was clerk to a merchant. Watson was a pious, sensible young man, of great integrity; the others rather more lax in their principles of religion, particularly Ralph, who as well as Collins, had been unsettled by me, for which they both made me suffer. Osborne was sensible, candid, frank; sincere and affectionate to his friends; but in literary matters, too fond of criticizing. Ralph was ingenious, genteel in his manners, and extremely eloquent; I think I never knew a prettier talker. Both of them great admirers of poetry, and began to try their hands in little pieces. Many pleasant walks we four had together on Sundays into the woods, near Schuylkill, where we read to one another, and conferred on what we read.

Ralph was inclined to pursue the study of poetry, not doubting but he might become eminent in it and make his fortune by it, alleging that the best poets must, when they first began to write, make as many faults as he did. Osborne dissuaded him, assured him he had no genius for poetry, and advised him to think of nothing beyond the business he was bred to; that in the mercantile way, though he had no stock, he might by his diligence and punctuality recommend himself to employment as a factor, and in time acquire wherewith to trade on his own account. I approved the amusing one's self with poetry now and then, so far as to improve one's language, but no farther.

On this it was proposed that we should each of us, at our next meeting, produce a piece of our own composing, in order to improve by our mutual observations, criticisms, and corrections. As language and expression were what we had in view, we excluded all

considerations of invention by agreeing that the task should be a version of the eighteenth Psalm, which describes the descent of a Deity. When the time of our meeting drew nigh, Ralph called on me first, and let me know his piece was ready. I told him I had been busy, and having little inclination, had done nothing. He then showed me his piece for my opinion, and I much approved it, as it appeared to me to have great merit. "Now," says he, "Osborne never will allow the least merit in anything of mine, but makes a thousand criticisms out of mere envy. He is not so jealous of you; I wish, therefore, you would take this piece, and produce it as yours; I will pretend not to have had time, and so produce nothing. We shall then see what he will say to it." It was agreed, and I immediately transcribed it, that it might appear in my own hand.

We met; Watson's performance was read; there were some beauties in it, but many defects. Osborne's was read; it was much better; Ralph did it justice; remarked some faults, but applauded the beauties. He himself had nothing to produce. I was backward; seemed desirous of being excused; had not had sufficient time to correct, etc.; but no excuse could be admitted; produce I must. It was read and repeated; Watson and Osborne gave up the contest, and joined in applauding it. Ralph only made some criticisms, and proposed some amendments; but I defended my text. Osborne was against Ralph, and told him he was no better a critic than poet, so he dropped the argument. As they two went home together, Osborne expressed himself still more strongly in favor of what he thought my production, having restrained himself before, as he said, lest I

should think it flattery. "But who would have imagined," said he, "that Franklin had been capable of such a performance; such painting, such force, such fire! He has even improved the original. In his common conversation he seems to have no choice of words; he hesitates and blunders; and yet, good God! how he writes!" When we next met, Ralph discovered the trick we had played him, and Osborne was a little laughed at.

This transaction fixed Ralph in his resolution of becoming a poet. I did all I could to dissuade him from it, but he continued scribbling verses till *Pope* cured him. He became, however, a pretty good prose writer. More of him hereafter. But, as I may not have occasion again to mention the other two, I shall just remark here, that Watson died in my arms a few years after, much lamented, being the best of our set. Osborne went to the West Indies, where he became an eminent lawyer and made money, but died young. He and I had made a serious agreement, that the one who happened first to die should, if possible, make a friendly visit to the other, and acquaint him how he found things in that separate state. But he never fulfilled his promise.

The governor, seeming to like my company, had me frequently to his house, and his setting me up was always mentioned as a fixed thing. I was to take with me letters recommendatory to a number of his friends, besides the letter of credit to furnish me with the necessary money for purchasing the press and types, paper, etc. For these letters I was appointed to call at different times, when they were to be ready; but a future time was still named. Thus he went on till the ship, whose departure too had been

several times postponed, was on the point of sailing Then, when I called to take my leave and receive the letters, his secretary, Dr. Bard, came out to me and said the governor was extremely busy in writing, but would be down at Newcastle before the ship, and there the letters would be delivered to me.

Ralph, though married, and having one child, had determined to accompany me in this voyage. It was thought he intended to establish a correspondence, and obtain goods to sell on commission; but I found afterwards, that, through some discontent with his wife's relations, he purposed to leave her on their hands, and never return again. Having taken leave of my friends, and interchanged some promises with Miss Read, I left Philadelphia in the ship, which anchored at Newcastle. The governor was there; but when I went to his lodging, the secretary came to me from him with the civilest message in the world, that he could not then see me, being engaged in business of the utmost importance, but should send the letters to me on board, wished me heartily a good voyage and a speedy return, etc. I returned on board a little puzzled, but still not doubting.

III

ADVENTURES IN LONDON

Mr. Andrew Hamilton, a famous lawyer of Philadelphia, had taken passage in the same ship for himself and son, and with Mr. Denham, a Quaker merchant, and Messrs. Onion and Russel, masters of an iron work in Maryland, had engaged the great cabin, so that Ralph and I were forced to take up with a berth in the steerage, and none on board knowing us, were considered as ordinary persons. But Mr. Hamilton and his son (it was James, since governor) returned from Newcastle to Philadelphia, the father being recalled by a great fee to plead for a seized ship; and, just before we sailed, Colonel French coming on board, and showing me great respect, I was more taken notice of, and, with my friend Ralph, invited by the other gentlemen to come into the cabin, there being now room. Accordingly, we removed thither.

Understanding that Colonel French had brought on board the governor's dispatches, I asked the captain for those letters that were to be under my care. He said all were put into the bag together and he could not then come at them; but, before we landed in England, I should have an opportunity of picking them out; so I was satisfied for the present, and we proceeded on our voyage. We had a sociable company in the cabin, and lived uncommonly well, having the addition of all Mr. Hamilton's stores, who had laid in plentifully. In this passage Mr. Denham contracted

a friendship for me that continued during his life. The voyage was otherwise not a pleasant one, as we had a great deal of bad weather.

When we came into the Channel, the captain kept his word with me, and gave me an opportunity of examining the bag for the governor's letters. I found none upon which my name was put as under my care. I picked out six or seven, that, by the handwriting, I thought might be the promised letters, especially as one of them was directed to Basket, the king's printer, and another to some stationer. We arrived in London the 24th of December, 1724. I waited upon the stationer, who came first in my way, delivering the letter as from Governor Keith. "I don't know such a person," says he; but, opening the letter, "Oh! this is from Riddlesden. I have lately found him to be a complete rascal, and I will have nothing to do with him, nor receive any letters from him." So, putting the letter into my hand, he turned on his heel and left me to serve some customer. I was surprised to find these were not the governor's letters; and, after recollecting and comparing circumstances, I began to doubt his sincerity. I found my friend Denham, and opened the whole affair to him. He let me into Keith's character; told me there was not the least probability that he had written any letters for me; that no one, who knew him, had the smallest dependence on him; and he laughed at the notion of the governor's giving me a letter of credit, having, as he said, no credit to give. On my expressing some concern about what I should do, he advised me to endeavor getting some employment in the way of my business. "Among the printers here," said he, "you will improve yourself, and when you re-

turn to America, you will set up to greater advantage."

We both of us happened to know, as well as the stationer, that Riddlesden, the attorney, was a very knave. He had half ruined Miss Read's father by persuading him to be bound for him. By this letter it appeared there was a secret scheme on foot to the prejudice of Hamilton (supposed to be then coming over with us); and that Keith was concerned in it with Riddlesden. Denham, who was a friend of Hamilton's, thought he ought to be acquainted with it; so, when he arrived in England, which was soon after, partly from resentment and ill-will to Keith and Riddlesden, and partly from good-will to him, I waited on him, and gave him the letter. He thanked me cordially, the information being of importance to him; and from that time he became my friend, greatly to my advantage afterwards on many occasions.

But what shall we think of a governor's playing such pitiful tricks, and imposing so grossly on a poor ignorant boy! It was a habit he had acquired. He wished to please everybody; and, having little to give, he gave expectations. He was otherwise an ingenious, sensible man, a pretty good writer, and a good governor for the people, though not for his constituents, the proprietaries, whose instructions he sometimes disregarded. Several of our best laws were of his planning and passed during his administration.

Ralph and I were inseparable companions. We took lodgings together in Little Britain at three shillings and sixpence a week — as much as we could then afford. He found some relations, but they were poor, and unable to assist him. He now let me know his intentions of remaining in London, and that he

never meant to return to Philadelphia. He had brought no money with him, the whole he could muster having been expended in paying his passage. I had fifteen pistoles; so he borrowed occasionally of me to subsist while he was looking out for business. He first endeavored to get into the playhouse, believing himself qualified for an actor; but Wilkes, to whom he applied, advised him candidly not to think of that employment, as it was impossible he should succeed in it. Then he proposed to Roberts, a publisher in Paternoster Row, to write for him a weekly paper like the *Spectator*, on certain conditions, which Roberts did not approve. Then he endeavored to get employment as a hackney writer, to copy for the stationers and lawyers about the Temple, but could find no vacancy.

I immediately got into work at Palmer's, then a famous printing-house in Bartholomew Close, and here I continued near a year. I was pretty diligent, but spent with Ralph a good deal of my earnings in going to plays and other places of amusement. We had together consumed all my pistoles, and now just rubbed on from hand to mouth. He seemed quite to forget his wife and child, and I, by degrees, my engagements with Miss Read, to whom I never wrote more than one letter, and that was to let her know I was not likely soon to return. This was another of the great errata of my life, which I should wish to correct if I were to live it over again. In fact, by our expenses, I was constantly kept unable to pay my passage.

At Palmer's I was employed in composing for the second edition of Wollaston's *Religion of Nature*. Some of his reasonings not appearing to me well

founded, I wrote a little metaphysical piece in which I made remarks on them. It was entitled *A Dissertation on Liberty and Necessity, Pleasure and Pain.* I inscribed it to my friend Ralph; I printed a small number. It occasioned my being more considered by Mr. Palmer as a young man of some ingenuity, though he seriously expostulated with me upon the principles of my pamphlet, which to him appeared abominable. My printing this pamphlet was another erratum. While I lodged in Little Britain, I made an acquaintance with one Wilcox, a bookseller, whose shop was at the next door. He had an immense collection of second-hand books. Circulating libraries were not then in use; but we agreed that, on certain reasonable terms, which I have now forgotten, I might take, read, and return any of his books. This I esteemed a great advantage, and I made as much use of it as I could.

My pamphlet by some means falling into the hands of one Lyons, a surgeon, author of a book entitled *The Infallibility of Human Judgment,* it occasioned an acquaintance between us. He took great notice of me, called on me often to converse on those subjects, carried me to the Horns, a pale-ale house in —— Lane, Cheapside, and introduced me to Dr. Mandeville, author of the *Fable of the Bees* who had a club there, of which he was the soul, being a most facetious, entertaining companion. Lyons, too, introduced me to Dr. Pemberton, at Batson's Coffee-house, who promised to give me an opportunity, some time or other, of seeing Sir Isaac Newton, of which I was extremely desirous; but this never happened.

I had brought over a few curiosities, among which

the principal was a purse made of the asbestos, which purifies by fire. Sir Hans Sloane heard of it, came to see me, and invited me to his house in Bloomsbury Square, where he showed me all his curiosities, and persuaded me to let him add that to the number, for which he paid me handsomely.

In our house there lodged a young woman, a milliner, who, I think, had a shop in the Cloisters. She had been genteelly bred, was sensible and lively, and of most pleasing conversation. Ralph read plays to her in the evenings, they grew intimate, she took another lodging and he followed her. They lived together some time; but he being still out of business, and her income not sufficient to maintain them with her child, he took a resolution of going from London, to try for a country school, which he thought himself well qualified to undertake, as he wrote an excellent hand, and was a master of arithmetic and accounts. This, however, he deemed a business below him, and confident of future better fortune, when he should be unwilling to have it known that he once was so meanly employed, he changed his name, and did me the honor to assume mine; for I soon after had a letter from him, acquainting me that he was settled in a small village (in Berkshire, I think it was, where he taught reading and writing to ten or a dozen boys, at sixpence each per week), recommending Mrs. T—— to my care, and desiring me to write to him, directing for Mr. Franklin, schoolmaster at such a place.

He continued to write frequently, sending me large specimens of an epic poem which he was then composing, and desiring my remarks and corrections. These I gave him from time to time, but endeavored rather

to discourage his proceeding. One of Young's Satires was then just published. I copied and sent him a great part of it, which set in a strong light the folly of pursuing the Muses with any hope of advancement by them. All was in vain; sheets of the poem continued to come by every post. In the mean time [other circumstances] . . . made a breach between us, and, when he returned again to London, he let me know he thought I had cancelled all the obligations he had been under to me. So I found I was never to expect his repaying me what I lent to him, or advanced for him. This, however, was not then of much consequence, as he was totally unable; and in the loss of his friendship I found myself relieved from a burden. I now began to think of getting a little money beforehand, and, expecting better work, I left Palmer's to work at Watts's, near Lincoln's Inn Fields, a still greater printing-house. Here I continued all the rest of my stay in London.

At my first admission into this printing-house I took to working at press, imagining I felt a want of the bodily exercise I had been used to in America, where presswork is mixed with composing. I drank only water; the other workmen, near fifty in number, were great guzzlers of beer. On occasion, I carried up and down stairs a large form of types in each hand, when others carried but one in both hands. They wondered to see, from this and several instances, that the *Water-American*, as they called me, was *stronger* than themselves, who drank *strong* beer! We had an alehouse boy who attended always in the house to supply the workmen. My companion at the press drank every day a pint before breakfast, a pint at breakfast with his bread and cheese, a pint

between breakfast and dinner, a pint at dinner, a pint in the afternoon about six o'clock, and another when he had done his day's work. I thought it a detestable custom; but it was necessary, he supposed, to drink *strong* beer, that he might be *strong* to labor. I endeavored to convince him that the bodily strength afforded by beer could only be in proportion to the grain or flour of the barley dissolved in the water of which it was made; that there was more flour in a pennyworth of bread; and therefore, if he would eat that with a pint of water, it would give him more strength than a quart of beer. He drank on, however, and had four or five shillings to pay out of his wages every Saturday night for that muddling liquor; an expense I was free from. And thus these poor devils keep themselves always under.

Watts, after some weeks, desiring to have me in the composing-room, I left the pressmen; a new *bien venu* or sum for drink, being five shillings, was demanded of me by the compositors. I thought it an imposition, as I had paid below; the master thought so too, and forbade my paying it. I stood out two or three weeks, was accordingly considered as an excommunicate, and had so many little pieces of private mischief done me, by mixing my sorts, transposing my pages, breaking my matter, etc., etc., if I were ever so little out of the room, and all ascribed to the chapel ghost, which they said ever haunted those not regularly admitted, that, notwithstanding the master's protection, I found myself obliged to comply and pay the money, convinced of the folly of being on ill terms with those one is to live with continually.

I was now on a fair footing with them, and soon acquired considerable influence. I proposed some rea-

sonable alterations in their chapel laws, and carried them against all opposition. From my example, a great part of them left their muddling breakfast of beer, and bread, and cheese, finding they could, with me, be supplied from a neighboring house with a large porringer of hot water-gruel, sprinkled with pepper, crumbed with bread, and a bit of butter in it, for the price of a pint of beer, viz., three half-pence. This was a more comfortable as well as cheaper breakfast, and kept their heads clearer. Those who continued sotting with beer all day were often, by not paying, out of credit at the alehouse, and used to make interest with me to get beer; their *light*, as they phrased it, *being out*. I watched the pay-table on Saturday night, and collected what I stood engaged for them, having to pay sometimes near thirty shillings a week on their accounts. This, and my being esteemed a pretty good *riggite*, that is, a jocular, verbal satirist, supported my consequence in the society. My constant attendance (I never making a St. Monday) recommended me to the master; and my uncommon quickness at composing occasioned my being put upon all work of dispatch, which was generally better paid. So I went on now very agreeably.

My lodging in Little Britain being too remote, I found another in Duke Street, opposite to the Romish chapel. It was two pair of stairs backwards, at an Italian warehouse. A widow lady kept the house, she had a daughter, and a maid servant, and a journeyman who attended the warehouse, but lodged abroad. After sending to inquire my character at the house where I last lodged, she agreed to take me in at the same rate, 3*s*. 6*d*. per week; cheaper, as she said, from the protection she expected in having a man

lodge in the house. She was a widow, an elderly woman; had been bred a Protestant, being a clergyman's daughter, but was converted to the Catholic religion by her husband, whose memory she much revered; had lived much among people of distinction, and knew a thousand anecdotes of them as far back as the times of Charles the Second. She was lame in her knees with the gout, and, therefore, seldom stirred out of her room, so sometimes wanted company; and hers was so highly amusing to me, that I was sure to spend an evening with her whenever she desired it. Our supper was only half an anchovy each, on a very little strip of bread and butter, and half a pint of ale between us; but the entertainment was in her conversation. My always keeping good hours, and giving little trouble in the family, made her unwilling to part with me; so that, when I talked of a lodging I had heard of, nearer my business, for two shillings a week, which, intent as I now was on saving money, made some difference, she bid me not think of it, for she would abate me two shillings a week for the future; so I remained with her at one shilling and sixpence as long as I stayed in London.

In a garret of her house there lived a maiden lady of seventy, in the most retired manner, of whom my landlady gave me this account: that she was a Roman Catholic, had been sent abroad when young, and lodged in a nunnery with an intent of becoming a nun; but, the country not agreeing with her, she returned to England, where, there being no nunnery, she had vowed to lead the life of a nun, as near as might be done in those circumstances. Accordingly, she had given all her estate to charitable uses, reserving only twelve pounds a year to live on, and out of

his sum she still gave a great deal in charity, living herself on water-gruel only, and using no fire but to boil it. She had lived many years in that garret, being permitted to remain there gratis by successive Catholic tenants of the house below, as they deemed it a blessing to have her there. A priest visited her to confess her every day. "I have asked her," says my landlady, "how she, as she lived, could possibly find so much employment for a confessor?" "Oh," said she, "it is impossible to avoid *vain thoughts*." I was permitted once to visit her. She was cheerful and polite, and conversed pleasantly. The room was clean, but had no other furniture than a mattress, a table with a crucifix and book, a stool which she gave me to sit on, and a picture over the chimney of Saint Veronica displaying her handkerchief, with the miraculous figure of Christ's bleeding face on it, which she explained to me with great seriousness. She looked pale, but was never sick; and I give it as another instance on how small an income life and health may be supported.

At Watts's printing-house I contracted an acquaintance with an ingenious young man, one Wygate, who, having wealthy relations, had been better educated than most printers; was a tolerable Latinist, spoke French, and loved reading. I taught him and a friend of his to swim at twice going into the river, and they soon became good swimmers. They introduced me to some gentlemen from the country, who went to Chelsea by water to see the College and Don Saltero's curiosities. In our return, at the request of the company, whose curiosity Wygate had excited, I stripped and leaped into the river, and swam from near Chelsea to Blackfriar's, performing on the way

many feats of activity, both upon and under water, that surprised and pleased those to whom they were novelties.

I had from a child been ever delighted with this exercise, had studied and practised all Thevenot's motions and positions, added some of my own, aiming at the graceful and easy as well as the useful. All these I took this occasion of exhibiting to the company, and was much flattered by their admiration; and Wygate, who was desirous of becoming a master, grew more and more attached to me on that account, as well as from the similarity of our studies. He at length proposed to me travelling all over Europe together, supporting ourselves everywhere by working at our business. I was once inclined to it; but, mentioning it to my good friend Mr. Denham, with whom I often spent an hour when I had leisure, he dissuaded me from it, advising me to think only of returning to Pennsylvania, which he was now about to do.

I must record one trait of this good man's character. He had formerly been in business at Bristol, but failed in debt to a number of people, compounded and went to America. There, by a close application to business as a merchant, he acquired a plentiful fortune in a few years. Returning to England in the ship with me, he invited his old creditors to an entertainment, at which he thanked them for the easy composition they had favored him with, and, when they expected nothing but the treat, every man at the first remove found under his plate an order on a banker for the full amount of the unpaid remainder with interest.

He now told me he was about to return to Philadelphia, and should carry over a great quantity of goods

in order to open a store there. He proposed to take me over as his clerk, to keep his books, in which he would instruct me, copy his letters, and attend the store. He added that, as soon as I should be acquainted with mercantile business, he would promote me by sending me with a cargo of flour and bread, etc., to the West Indies, and procure me commissions from others which would be profitable, and if I managed well, would establish me handsomely. The thing pleased me; for I was grown tired of London, remembered with pleasure the happy months I had spent in Pennsylvania, and wished again to see it; therefore I immediately agreed on the terms of fifty pounds a year, Pennsylvania money; less, indeed, than my present gettings as a compositor, but affording a better prospect.

I now took leave of printing, as I thought, forever, and was daily employed in my new business, going about with Mr. Denham among the tradesmen to purchase various articles, and seeing them packed up, doing errands, calling upon workmen to dispatch, etc.; and when all was on board, I had a few days' leisure. On one of these days, I was, to my surprise, sent for by a great man I knew only by name, a Sir William Wyndham, and I waited upon him. He had heard by some means or other of my swimming from Chelsea to Blackfriar's, and of my teaching Wygate and another young man to swim in a few hours. He had two sons, about to set out on their travels; he wished to have them first taught swimming, and proposed to gratify me handsomely if I would teach them. They were not yet come to town, and my stay was uncertain, so I could not undertake it; but from this incident, I thought it likely that, if I were to re-

main in England and open a swimming-school, I might get a good deal of money; and it struck me so strongly that, had the overture been sooner made me, probably I should not so soon have returned to America. After many years, you and I had something of more importance to do with one of these sons of Sir William Wyndham, become Earl of Egremont, which I shall mention in its place.

Thus I spent about eighteen months in London; most part of the time I worked hard at my business, and spent but little upon myself except in seeing plays and in books. My friend Ralph had kept me poor; he owed me about twenty-seven pounds, which I was now never likely to receive; a great sum out of my small earnings! I loved him, notwithstanding, for he had many amiable qualities. I had by no means improved my fortune; but I had picked up some very ingenious acquaintances, whose conversation was of great advantage to me; and I had read considerably.

We sailed from Gravesend on the 23d of July, 1726. For the incidents of the voyage, I refer you to my Journal, where you will find them all minutely related. Perhaps the most important part of that journal is the *plan* to be found in it which I formed at sea, for regulating my future conduct in life. It is the more remarkable, as being formed when I was so young, and yet being pretty faithfully adhered to quite through to old age.

IV

RETURN TO PHILADELPHIA

We landed in Philadelphia on the 11th of October, where I found sundry alterations. Keith was no longer governor, being superseded by Major Gordon. I met him walking the streets as a common citizen. He seemed a little ashamed at seeing me, but passed without saying anything. I should have been as much ashamed at seeing Miss Read, had not her friends, despairing with reason of my return after the receipt of my letter, persuaded her to marry another, one Rogers, a potter, which was done in my absence. With him, however, she was never happy, and soon parted from him, refusing to cohabit with him or bear his name, it now being said that he had another wife. He was a worthless fellow, though an excellent workman, which was the temptation to her friends. He got into debt, ran away in 1727 or 1728, went to the West Indies, and died there. Keimer had got a better house, a shop well supplied with stationery, plenty of new types, a number of hands, though none good, and seemed to have a great deal of business.

Mr. Denham took a store in Water Street, where we opened our goods; I attended the business diligently, studied accounts, and grew, in a little time, expert at selling. We lodged and boarded together; he counselled me as a father, having a sincere regard for me. I respected and loved him, and we might have gone on together very happy; but in the beginning of February, 1726/7, when I had just passed my

twenty-first year, we both were taken ill. My distemper was a pleurisy, which very nearly carried me off. I suffered a good deal, gave up the point in my own mind, and was rather disappointed when I found myself recovering, regretting, in some degree, that I must now, some time or other, have all that disagreeable work to do over again. I forget what his distemper was; it held him a long time, and at length carried him off. He left me a small legacy in a nuncupative will as a token of his kindness for me, and he left me once more to the wide world; for the store was taken into the care of his executors, and my employment under him ended.

My brother-in-law, Holmes, being now at Philadelphia, advised my return to my business; and Keimer tempted me, with an offer of large wages by the year, to come and take the management of his printing-house, that he might better attend his stationer's shop. I had heard a bad character of him in London from his wife and her friends, and was not fond of having any more to do with him. I tried for further employment as a merchant's clerk; but not readily meeting with any, I closed again with Keimer. I found in his house these hands: Hugh Meredith, a Welsh Pennsylvanian, thirty years of age, bred to country work; honest, sensible, had a great deal of solid observation, was something of a reader, but given to drink. Stephen Potts, a young countryman of full age, bred to the same, of uncommon natural parts, and great wit and humor, but a little idle. These he had agreed with at extreme low wages per week, to be raised a shilling every three months, as they would deserve by improving in their business; and the expectation of these high wages, to come on

ereafter, was what he had drawn them in with. Meredith was to work at press, Potts at book-binding, which he, by agreement, was to teach them, though he knew neither one nor the other. John ——, a wild Irishman, brought up to no business, whose service, for four years, Keimer had purchased from the captain of a ship; he, too, was to be made a pressman. George Webb, an Oxford scholar, whose time for four years he had likewise bought, intending him for a compositor, of whom more presently, and David Harry, a country boy, whom he had taken apprentice.

I soon perceived that the intention of engaging me at wages so much higher than he had been used to give was to have these raw, cheap hands formed through me; and as soon as I had instructed them, then they being all articled to him, he should be able to do without me. I went on, however, very cheerfully, put his printing-house in order, which had been in great confusion, and brought his hands by degrees to mind their business and to do it better.

It was an odd thing to find an Oxford scholar in the situation of a bought servant. He was not more than eighteen years of age, and gave me this account of himself; that he was born in Gloucester, educated at a grammar-school there, had been distinguished among the scholars for some apparent superiority in performing his part, when they exhibited plays; belonged to the Witty Club there, and had written some pieces in prose and verse, which were printed in the Gloucester newspapers; thence he was sent to Oxford, where he continued about a year, but not well satisfied, wishing of all things to see London, and become a player. At length receiving his quarterly allowance

of fifteen guineas, instead of discharging his debts he walked out of town, hid his gown in a furze bush, and footed it to London, where, having no friend to advise him, he fell into bad company, soon spent his guineas, found no means of being introduced among the players, grew necessitous, pawned his clothes, and wanted bread. Walking the street very hungry, and not knowing what to do with himself, a crimp's bill was put into his hand, offering immediate entertainment and encouragement to such as would bind themselves to serve in America. He went directly, signed the indentures, was put into the ship, and came over, never writing a line to acquaint his friends what was become of him. He was lively, witty, good-natured, and a pleasant companion, but idle, thoughtless, and imprudent to the last degree.

John, the Irishman, soon ran away; with the rest I began to live very agreeably, for they all respected me the more, as they found Keimer incapable of instructing them, and that from me they learned something daily. We never worked on Saturday, that being Keimer's Sabbath, so I had two days for reading. My acquaintance with ingenious people in the town increased. Keimer himself treated me with great civility and apparent regard, and nothing now made me uneasy but my debt to Vernon, which I was yet unable to pay, being hitherto but a poor economist. He, however, kindly made no demand of it.

Our printing-house often wanted sorts, and there was no letter-founder in America; I had seen types cast at James's in London, but without much attention to the manner; however, I now contrived a mould, made use of the letters we had as puncheons,

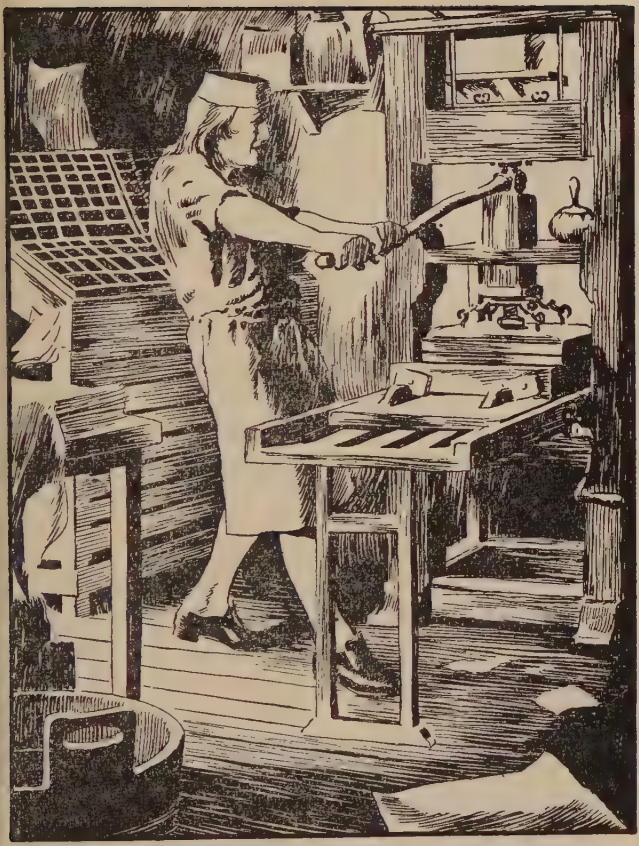
truck the matrices in lead, and thus supplied in a pretty tolerable way all deficiencies. I also engraved several things on occasion; I made the ink; I was warehouseman, and everything, and, in short, quite a factotum.

But, however serviceable I might be, I found that my services became every day of less importance, as the other hands improved in the business; and when Keimer paid my second quarter's wages, he let me know that he felt them too heavy, and thought I should make an abatement. He grew by degrees less civil, put on more of the master, frequently found fault, was captious, and seemed ready for an outbreaking. I went on, nevertheless, with a good deal of patience, thinking that his incumbered circumstances were partly the cause. At length a trifle snapped our connections; for, a great noise happening near the court-house, I put my head out of the window to see what was the matter. Keimer, being in the street, looked up and saw me, called out to me in a loud voice and angry tone to mind my business, adding some reproachful words, that nettled me the more for their publicity, all the neighbors who were looking out on the same occasion being witnesses how I was treated. He came up immediately into the printing-house, continued the quarrel, high words passed on both sides, he gave me the quarter's warning we had stipulated, expressing a wish that he had not been obliged to so long a warning. I told him his wish was unnecessary, for I would leave him that instant; and so, taking my hat, walked out of doors, desiring Meredith, whom I saw below, to take care of some things I left, and bring them to my lodgings.

Meredith came accordingly in the evening, when

we talked my affair over. He had conceived a great regard for me, and was very unwilling that I should leave the house while he remained in it. He dissuaded me from returning to my native country, which I began to think of; he reminded me that Keimer was in debt for all he possessed; that his creditors began to be uneasy; that he kept his shop miserably, sold often without profit for ready money, and often trusted without keeping accounts; that he must therefore fail, which would make a vacancy I might profit of. I objected my want of money. He then let me know that his father had a high opinion of me, and from some discourse that had passed between them, he was sure would advance money to set us up, if I would enter into partnership with him. "My time," says he, "will be out with Keimer in the spring; by that time we may have our press and types in from London. I am sensible I am no workman; if you like it, your skill in the business shall be set against the stock I furnish, and we will share the profits equally."

The proposal was agreeable, and I consented; his father was in town and approved of it; the more as he saw I had great influence with his son, had prevailed on him to abstain long from dram-drinking, and he hoped might break him of that wretched habit entirely, when we came to be so closely connected. I gave an inventory to the father, who carried it to a merchant; the things were sent for, the secret was to be kept till they should arrive, and in the mean time I was to get work, if I could, at the other printing-house. But I found no vacancy there, and so remained idle a few days, when Keimer, on a prospect of being employed to print some paper money in New



FRANKLIN AT THE PRINTING PRESS

ersey, which would require cuts and various types hat I only could supply, and apprehending Brad- rd might engage me and get the job from him, sent e a very civil message, that old friends should not art for a few words, the effect of sudden passion, nd wishing me to return. Meredith persuaded me o comply, as it would give more opportunity for his nprovement under my daily instructions; so I re- urned, and we went on more smoothly than for ome time before. The New Jersey job was ob- ained, I contrived a copper-plate press for it, the rst that had been seen in the country; I cut several rnaments and checks for the bills. We went to- ether to Burlington, where I executed the whole to atisfaction; and he received so large a sum for the ork as to be enabled thereby to keep his head much onger above water.

At Burlington I made an acquaintance with many rincipal people of the province. Several of them ad been appointed by the Assembly a committee to ttend the press, and take care that no more bills ere printed than the law directed. They were, herefore, by turns, constantly with us, and gener- lly he who attended brought with him a friend or wo for company. My mind having been much ore improved by reading than Keimer's, I suppose was for that reason my conversation seemed to be ore valued. They had me to their houses, intro- uced me to their friends, and showed me much civil- y; while he, though the master, was a little ne- lected. In truth, he was an odd fish; ignorant of ommon life, fond of rudely opposing received opin- ns, slovenly to extreme dirtiness, enthusiastic in me points of religion, and a little knavish withal.

We continued there near three months; and by that time I could reckon among my acquired friends, Judge Allen, Samuel Bustill, the secretary of the province, Isaac Pearson, Joseph Cooper, and several of the Smiths, members of Assembly, and Isaac Decow, the surveyor-general. The latter was a shrewd, sagacious old man, who told me that he began for himself, when young, by wheeling clay for the brick-makers, learned to write after he was of age, carried the chain for surveyors, who taught him surveying, and he had now by his industry acquired a good estate; and says he, "I foresee that you will soon work this man out of his business, and make a fortune in it at Philadelphia." He had not then the least intimation of my intention to set up there or anywhere. These friends were afterwards of great use to me, as I occasionally was to some of them. They all continued their regard for me as long as they lived.

Before I enter upon my public appearance in business, it may be well to let you know the then state of my mind with regard to my principles and morals, that you may see how far those influenced the future events of my life. My parents had early given me religious impressions, and brought me through my childhood piously in the Dissenting way. But I was scarce fifteen when, after doubting by turns of several points, as I found them disputed in the different books I read, I began to doubt of Revelation itself. Some books against Deism fell into my hands; they were said to be the substance of sermons preached at Boyle's Lectures. It happened that they wrought an effect on me quite contrary to what was intended by them; for the arguments of the Deists, which were quoted to be refuted, appeared to me much stronger

than the refutations; in short, I soon became a thorough Deist. My arguments perverted some others, particularly Collins and Ralph; but each of them having afterwards wronged me greatly without the least compunction, and recollecting Keith's conduct towards me (who was another freethinker), and my own towards Vernon and Miss Read, which at times gave me great trouble, I began to suspect that this doctrine, though it might be true, was not very useful. My London pamphlet, which had for its motto these lines of Dryden:

> "Whatever is, is right. Though purblind man
> Sees but a part o' the chain, the nearest link:
> His eyes not carrying to the equal beam,
> That poises all above;"

and from the attributes of God, his infinite wisdom, goodness, and power, concluded that nothing could possibly be wrong in the world, and that vice and virtue were empty distinctions, no such things existing, appeared now not so clever a performance as I once thought it; and I doubted whether some error had not insinuated itself unperceived into my argument, so as to infect all that followed, as is common in metaphysical reasonings.

I grew convinced that *truth*, *sincerity*, and *integrity* in dealings between man and man were of the utmost importance to the felicity of life; and I formed written resolutions, which still remain in my journal book, to practise them ever while I lived. Revelation had indeed no weight with me, as such, but I entertained an opinion that, though certain actions might not be bad *because* they were forbidden by it, or good *because* it commanded them, yet probably

those actions might be forbidden *because* they were bad for us, or commanded *because* they were beneficial to us, in their own natures, all the circumstances of things considered. And this persuasion, with the kind hand of Providence, or some guardian angel, or accidental favorable circumstances and situations, or all together, preserved me, through this dangerous time of youth, and the hazardous situations I was sometimes in among strangers, remote from the eye and advice of my father, without any wilful gross immorality or injustice, that might have been expected from my want of religion. I say wilful, because the instances I have mentioned had something of *necessity* in them, from my youth, inexperience, and the knavery of others. I had, therefore, a tolerable character to begin the world with; I valued it properly, and determined to preserve it.

We had not been long returned to Philadelphia before the new types arrived from London. We settled with Keimer, and left him by his consent before he heard of it. We found a house to hire near the market, and took it. To lessen the rent, which was then but twenty-four pounds a year, though I have since known it to let for seventy, we took in Thomas Godfrey, a glazier, and his family, who were to pay a considerable part of it to us, and we to board with them. We had scarce opened our letters and put our press in order, before George House, an acquaintance of mine, brought a countryman to us, whom he had met in the street inquiring for a printer. All our cash was now expended in the variety of particulars we had been obliged to procure, and this countryman's five shillings, being our first-fruits, and coming so seasonably, gave me more pleasure than any crown I have

nce earned; and the gratitude I felt toward House as made me often more ready than perhaps I should therwise have been to assist young beginners.

There are croakers in every country, always boding s ruin. Such a one then lived in Philadelphia; a erson of note, an elderly man, with a wise look and very grave manner of speaking; his name was amuel Mickle. This gentleman, a stranger to me, topped one day at my door, and asked me if I was the oung man who had lately opened a new printing-ouse. Being answered in the affirmative, he said he as sorry for me, because it was an expensive under-aking, and the expense would be lost; for Philadel-hia was a sinking place, the people already half ankrupts, or near being so; all appearances to the ontrary, such as new buildings and the rise of rents, eing to his certain knowledge fallacious; for they vere, in fact, among the things that would soon ruin s. And he gave me such a detail of misfortunes ow existing, or that were soon to exist, that he left ne half melancholy. Had I known him before I ngaged in this business, probably I never should ave done it. This man continued to live in this de-aying place, and to declaim in the same strain, re-using for many years to buy a house there, because ll was going to destruction; and at last I had the leasure of seeing him give five times as much for one s he might have bought it for when he first began is croaking.

I should have mentioned before that, in the au-umn of the preceding year, I had formed most of ny ingenious acquaintance into a club of mutual im-rovement, which we called the JUNTO; we met on riday evenings. The rules that I drew up required

that every member, in his turn, should produce one or more queries on any point of Morals, Politics, or Natural Philosophy, to be discussed by the company; and once in three months produce and read an essay of his own writing, on any subject he pleased. Our debates were to be under the direction of a president, and to be conducted in the sincere spirit of inquiry after truth, without fondness for dispute, or desire of victory; and to prevent warmth, all expressions of positiveness in opinions, or direct contradiction, were after some time made contraband, and prohibited under small pecuniary penalties.

The first members were Joseph Breintnal, a copier of deeds for the scriveners, a good-natured, friendly, middle-aged man, a great lover of poetry, reading all he could meet with, and writing some that was tolerable; very ingenious in many little knicknackeries, and of sensible conversation.

Thomas Godfrey, a self-taught mathematician, great in his way, and afterward inventor of what is now called Hadley's Quadrant. But he knew little out of his way, and was not a pleasing companion; as, like most great mathematicians I have met with, he expected universal precision in everything said, or was forever denying or distinguishing upon trifles, to the disturbance of all conversation. He soon left us.

Nicholas Scull, a surveyor, afterward surveyor-general, who loved books, and sometimes made a few verses.

William Parsons, bred a shoemaker, but, loving reading, had acquired a considerable share of mathematics, which he first studied with a view to astrology and afterwards laughed at it. He also became surveyor-general.

William Maugridge, a joiner, a most exquisite mechanic, and a solid, sensible man.

Hugh Meredith, Stephen Potts, and George Webb have characterized before.

Robert Grace, a young gentleman of some fortune, generous, lively, and witty; a lover of punning and of his friends.

And William Coleman, then a merchant's clerk, about my age, who had the coolest, clearest head, the best heart, and the exactest morals of almost any man ever met with. He became afterwards a merchant of great note, and one of our provincial judges. Our friendship continued without interruption to his death, upward of forty years; and the club continued almost as long, and was the best school of philosophy, morality, and politics that then existed in the province; for our queries, which were read the week preceding their discussion, put us upon reading with attention upon the several subjects, that we might speak more to the purpose; and here, too, we acquired better habits of conversation, everything being studied in our rules which might prevent our disgusting each other. From hence the long continuance of the club, which I shall have frequent occasion to speak further of hereafter.

But my giving this account of it here is to show something of the interest I had, every one of these exerting themselves in recommending business to us. Breintnal particularly procured us from the Quakers the printing of forty sheets of their history, the rest being done by Keimer; and upon this we worked exceedingly hard, for the price was low. It was a folio, pro patria size, in pica, with long primer notes. I composed of it a sheet a day, and Meredith worked

it off at press; it was often eleven at night, and sometimes later, before I had finished my distribution for the next day's work, for the little jobs sent in by our other friends now and then put us back. But so determined I was to continue doing a sheet a day of the folio, that one night, when, having imposed my forms, I thought my day's work over, one of them by accident was broken, and two pages reduced to pi, I immediately distributed and composed it over again before I went to bed; and this industry, visible to our neighbors, began to give us character and credit; particularly, I was told, that mention being made of the new printing-office at the merchants' Every-night club, the general opinion was that it must fail, there being already two printers in the place, Keimer and Bradford; but Dr. Baird (whom you and I saw many years after at his native place, St. Andrew's in Scotland) gave a contrary opinion: "For the industry of that Franklin," says he, "is superior to anything I ever saw of the kind; I see him still at work when I go home from club, and he is at work again before his neighbors are out of bed." This struck the rest, and we soon after had offers from one of them to supply us with stationery; but as yet we did not choose to engage in shop business.

I mention this industry the more particularly and the more freely, though it seems to be talking in my own praise, that those of my posterity who shall read it may know the use of that virtue, when they see its effects in my favor throughout this relation.

George Webb, who had found a female friend that lent him wherewith to purchase his time of Keimer now came to offer himself as a journeyman to us. We could not then employ him; but I foolishly let him

know as a secret that I soon intended to begin a newspaper, and might then have work for him. My hopes of success, as I told him, were founded on this, that the then only newspaper, printed by Bradford, was a paltry thing, wretchedly managed, no way entertaining, and yet was profitable to him; I therefore thought a good paper would scarcely fail of good encouragement. I requested Webb not to mention it; but he told it to Keimer, who immediately, to be beforehand with me, published proposals for printing one himself, on which Webb was to be employed. I resented this; and to counteract them, as I could not yet begin our paper, I wrote several pieces of entertainment for Bradford's paper, under the title of the Busy Body, which Breintnal continued some months. By this means the attention of the public was fixed on that paper, and Keimer's proposals, which we burlesqued and ridiculed, were disregarded. He began his paper, however, and, after carrying it on three quarters of a year, with at most only ninety subscribers, he offered it to me for a trifle; and I, having been ready some time to go on with it, took it in hand directly; and it proved in a few years extremely profitable to me.

V

IN BUSINESS FOR HIMSELF

I PERCEIVE that I am apt to speak in the singular number, though our partnership still continued; the reason may be that, in fact, the whole management of the business lay upon me. Meredith was no compositor, a poor pressman, and seldom sober. My friends lamented my connection with him, but I was to make the best of it.

Our first papers made a quite different appearance from any before in the province; a better type, and better printed; but some spirited remarks of my writing, on the dispute then going on between Governor Burnet and the Massachusetts Assembly, struck the principal people, occasioned the paper and the manager of it to be much talked of, and in a few weeks brought them all to be our subscribers.

Their example was followed by many, and our number went on growing continually. This was one of the first good effects of my having learned a little to scribble; another was, that the leading men, seeing a newspaper now in the hands of one who could also handle a pen, thought it convenient to oblige and encourage me. Bradford still printed the votes, and laws, and other public business. He had printed an address of the House to the governor in a coarse, blundering manner; we reprinted it elegantly and correctly, and sent one to every member. They were sensible of the difference: it strengthened the hands of our friends in the House, and they voted us their printers for the year ensuing.

Among my friends in the House I must not forget Mr. Hamilton, before mentioned, who was then returned from England, and had a seat in it. He interested himself for me strongly in that instance, as he did in many others afterward, continuing his patronage till his death.

Mr. Vernon, about this time, put me in mind of the debt I owed him, but did not press me. I wrote him an ingenuous letter of acknowledgment, craved his forbearance a little longer, which he allowed me, and as soon as I was able, I paid the principal with interest, and many thanks; so that erratum was in some degree corrected.

But now another difficulty came upon me which I had never the least reason to expect. Mr. Meredith's father, who was to have paid for our printing-house, according to the expectations given me, was able to advance only one hundred pounds currency, which had been paid; and a hundred more was due to the merchant, who grew impatient, and sued us all. We gave bail, but saw that, if the money could not be raised in time, the suit must soon come to a judgment and execution, and our hopeful prospects must, with us, be ruined, as the press and letters must be sold for payment, perhaps at half price.

In this distress two true friends, whose kindness I have never forgotten, nor ever shall forget while I can remember anything, came to me separately, unknown to each other, and, without any application from me, offering each of them to advance me all the money that should be necessary to enable me to take the whole business upon myself, if that should be practicable; but they did not like my continuing the partnership with Meredith, who, as they said, was often

seen drunk in the streets, and playing at low games in ale-houses, much to our discredit. These two friends were William Coleman and Robert Grace. I told them I could not propose a separation while any prospect remained of the Meredíths' fulfilling their part of our agreement, because I thought myself under great obligations to them for what they had done, and would do if they could; but, if they finally failed in their performance, and our partnership must be dissolved, I should then think myself at liberty to accept the assistance of my friends.

Thus the matter rested for some time, when I said to my partner, "Perhaps your father is dissatisfied at the part you have undertaken in this affair of ours, and is unwilling to advance for you and me what he would for you alone. If that is the case, tell me, and I will resign the whole to you, and go about my business." "No," said he, "my father has really been disappointed, and is really unable; and I am unwilling to distress him further. I see this is a business I am not fit for. I was bred a farmer, and it was a folly in me to come to town, and put myself, at thirty years of age, an apprentice to learn a new trade. Many of our Welsh people are going to settle in North Carolina, where land is cheap. I am inclined to go with them, and follow my old employment. You may find friends to assist you. If you will take the debts of the company upon you, return to my father the hundred pounds he has advanced, pay my little personal debts, and give me thirty pounds and a new saddle, I will relinquish the partnership, and leave the whole in your hands." I agreed to this proposal; it was drawn up in writing, signed, and sealed immediately. I gave him what he demanded, and he went

soon after to Carolina, from whence he sent me next year two long letters, containing the best account that had been given of that country, the climate, the soil, husbandry, etc., for in those matters he was very judicious. I printed them in the papers, and they gave great satisfaction to the public.

As soon as he was gone, I recurred to my two friends; and because I would not give an unkind preference to either, I took half of what each had offered and I wanted of one, and half of the other; paid off the company's debts, and went on with the business in my own name, advertising that the partnership was dissolved. I think this was in or about the year 1729.

About this time there was a cry among the people for more paper money, only fifteen thousand pounds being extant in the province, and that soon to be sunk. The wealthy inhabitants opposed any addition, being against all paper currency, from an apprehension that it would depreciate, as it had done in New England, to the prejudice of all creditors. We had discussed this point in our Junto, where I was on the side of an addition, being persuaded that the first small sum struck in 1723 had done much good by increasing the trade, employment, and number of inhabitants in the province, since I now saw all the old houses inhabited, and many new ones building; whereas I remembered well that when I first walked about the streets of Philadelphia, eating my roll, I saw most of the houses in Walnut Street, between Second and Front streets, with bills on their doors, "To be let;" and many likewise in Chestnut Street and other streets, which made me then think the inhabitants of the city were deserting it one after another.

Our debates possessed me so fully of the subject that I wrote and printed an anonymous pamphlet on it, entitled *The Nature and Necessity of a Paper Currency*. It was well received by the common people in general; but the rich men disliked it, for it increased and strengthened the clamor for more money, and they happening to have no writers among them that were able to answer it, their opposition slackened, and the point was carried by a majority in the House. My friends there, who conceived I had been of some service, thought fit to reward me by employing me in printing the money; a very profitable job and a great help to me. This was another advantage gained by my being able to write.

The utility of this currency became by time and experience so evident as never afterwards to be much disputed; so that it grew soon to fifty-five thousand pounds, and in 1739 to eighty thousand pounds, since which it arose during war to upwards of three hundred and fifty thousand pounds, trade, building, and inhabitants all the while increasing, though I now think there are limits beyond which the quantity may be hurtful.

I soon after obtained, through my friend Hamilton, the printing of the Newcastle paper money, another profitable job as I then thought it; small things appearing great to those in small circumstances; and these, to me, were really great advantages, as they were great encouragements. He procured for me, also, the printing of the laws and votes of that government, which continued in my hands as long as I followed the business.

I now opened a little stationer's shop. I had in it blanks of all sorts, the correctest that ever appeared

among us, being assisted in that by my friend Breintnal. I had also paper, parchment, chapmen's books, etc. One Whitemash, a compositor I had known in London, an excellent workman, now came to me, and worked with me constantly and diligently; and I took an apprentice, the son of Aquila Rose.

I began now gradually to pay off the debt I was under for the printing-house. In order to secure my credit and character as a tradesman, I took care not only to be in *reality* industrious and frugal, but to avoid all appearances to the contrary. I dressed plainly; I was seen at no places of idle diversion. I never went out a fishing or shooting; a book, indeed, sometimes debauched me from my work, but that was seldom, snug, and gave no scandal; and, to show that I was not above my business, I sometimes brought home the paper I purchased at the stores through the streets on a wheelbarrow. Thus being esteemed an industrious, thriving young man, and paying duly for what I bought, the merchants who imported stationery solicited my custom; others proposed supplying me with books, and I went on swimmingly. In the mean time, Keimer's credit and business declining daily, he was at last forced to sell his printing-house to satisfy his creditors. He went to Barbadoes, and there lived some years in very poor circumstances.

His apprentice, David Harry, whom I had instructed while I worked with him, set up in his place at Philadelphia, having bought his materials. I was at first apprehensive of a powerful rival in Harry, as his friends were very able, and had a good deal of interest. I therefore proposed a partnership to him, which he, fortunately for me, rejected with scorn. He was very proud, dressed like a gentleman, lived

expensively, took much diversion and pleasure abroad, ran in debt, and neglected his business; upon which, all business left him; and finding nothing to do, he followed Keimer to Barbadoes, taking the printing-house with him. There this apprentice employed his former master as a journeyman; they quarreled often; Harry went continually behindhand, and at length was forced to sell his types and return to his country work in Pennsylvania. The person that bought them employed Keimer to use them, but in a few years he died.

There remained now no competitor with me at Philadelphia but the old one, Bradford; who was rich and easy, did a little printing now and then by straggling hands, but was not very anxious about the business. However, as he kept the post-office, it was imagined he had better opportunities of obtaining news; his paper was thought a better distributer of advertisements than mine, and therefore had many more, which was a profitable thing to him, and a disadvantage to me; for, though I did indeed receive and send papers by the post, yet the public opinion was otherwise, for what I did send was by bribing the riders, who took them privately, Bradford being unkind enough to forbid it, which occasioned some resentment on my part; and I thought so meanly of him for it that, when I afterward came into his situation, I took care never to imitate it.

I had hitherto continued to board with Godfrey, who lived in part of my house with his wife and children, and had one side of the shop for his glazier's business, though he worked little, being always absorbed in his mathematics. Mrs. Godfrey projected a match for me with a relation's daughter, took op-

portunities of bringing us often together, till a serious courtship on my part ensued, the girl being in herself very deserving. The old folks encouraged me by continual invitations to supper, and by leaving us together, till at length it was time to explain. Mrs. Godfrey managed our little treaty. I let her know that I expected as much money with her daughter as would pay off my remaining debt for the printing-house, which I believe was not then above a hundred pounds. She brought me word they had no such sum to spare; I said they might mortgage their house in the loan-office. The answer to this, after some days, was, that they did not approve the match; that, on inquiry of Bradford, they had been informed the printing business was not a profitable one; the types would soon be worn out, and more wanted; that S. Keimer and D. Harry had failed one after the other, and I should probably soon follow them; and, therefore, I was forbidden the house, and the daughter shut up.

Whether this was a real change of sentiment or only artifice, on a supposition of our being too far engaged in affection to retract, and therefore that we should steal a marriage, which would leave them at liberty to give or withhold what they pleased, I know not; but I suspected the latter, resented it, and went no more. Mrs. Godfrey brought me afterward some more favorable accounts of their disposition, and would have drawn me on again; but I declared absolutely my resolution to have nothing more to do with that family. This was resented by the Godfreys; we differed, and they removed, leaving me the whole house, and I resolved to take no more inmates.

But this affair having turned my thoughts to marriage, I looked round me and made overtures of ac-

quaintance in other places; but soon found that, the business of a printer being generally thought a poor one, I was not to expect money with a wife, unless with such a one as I should not otherwise think agreeable. . . . A friendly correspondence as neighbors and old acquaintances had continued between me and Mrs. Read's family, who all had a regard for me from the time of my first lodging in their house. I was often invited there and consulted in their affairs, wherein I sometimes was of service. I pitied poor Miss Read's unfortunate situation, who was generally dejected, seldom cheerful, and avoided company. I considered my giddiness and inconstancy when in London as in a great degree the cause of her unhappiness, though the mother was good enough to think the fault more her own than mine, as she had prevented our marrying before I went thither, and persuaded the other match in my absence. Our mutual affection was revived, but there were now great objections to our union. The match was indeed looked upon as invalid, a preceding wife being said to be living in England; but this could not easily be proved, because of the distance; and though there was a report of his death, it was not certain. Then, though it should be true, he had left many debts, which his successor might be called upon to pay. We ventured, however, over all these difficulties, and I took her to wife, September 1, 1730. None of the inconveniences happened that we had apprehended; she proved a good and faithful helpmate, assisted me much by attending the shop; we throve together, and have ever mutually endeavored to make each other happy. Thus I corrected that great *erratum* as well as I could.

About this time, our club meeting, not at a tavern, but in a little room of Mr. Grace's, set apart for that purpose, a proposition was made by me that, since our books were often referred to in our disquisitions upon the queries, it might be convenient to us to have them all together where we met, that upon occasion they might be consulted; and by thus clubbing our books to a common library, we should, while we liked to keep them together, have each of us the advantage of using the books of all the other members, which would be nearly as beneficial as if each owned the whole. It was liked and agreed to, and we filled one end of the room with such books as we could best spare. The number was not so great as we expected; and though they had been of great use, yet some inconveniences occurring for want of due care of them, the collection, after about a year, was separated, and each took his books home again.

And now I set on foot my first project of a public nature, that for a subscription library. I drew up the proposals, got them put into form by our great scrivener, Brockden, and by the help of my friends in the Junto, procured fifty subscribers of forty shillings each to begin with, and ten shillings a year for fifty years, the term our company was to continue. We afterwards obtained a charter, the company being increased to one hundred; this was the mother of all the North American subscription libraries, now so numerous. It is become a great thing itself, and continually increasing. These libraries have improved the general conversation of the Americans, made the common tradesmen and farmers as intelligent as most gentlemen from other countries, and perhaps have contributed in some degree to the stand so generally

made throughout the colonies in defence of their privileges.

At the time I established myself in Pennsylvania, there was not a good bookseller's shop in any of the colonies to the southward of Boston. In New York and Philadelphia the printers were indeed stationers; they sold only paper, etc., almanacs, ballads, and a few common school books. Those who loved reading were obliged to send for their books from England; the members of the Junto had each a few. We had left the alehouse, where we first met, and hired a room to hold our club in. I proposed that we should all of us bring our books to that room, where they would not only be ready to consult in our conferences, but become a common benefit, each of us being at liberty to borrow such as he wished to read at home. This was accordingly done, and for some time contented us.

Finding the advantage of this little collection, I proposed to render the benefit from books more common, by commencing a public subscription library. I drew a sketch of the plan and rules that would be necessary, and got a skilful conveyancer, Mr. Charles Brockden, to put the whole in form of articles of agreement to be subscribed, by which each subscriber engaged to pay a certain sum down for the first purchase of books, and an annual contribution for increasing them. So few were the readers at that time in Philadelphia, and the majority of us so poor, that I was not able, with great industry, to find more than fifty persons, mostly young tradesmen, willing to pay down for this purpose forty shillings each, and ten shillings per annum. On this little fund we began.

The books were imported; the library was opened one day in the week for lending to the subscribers, on their promissory notes to pay double the value if not duly returned. The institution soon manifested its utility, was imitated by other towns, and in other provinces. The libraries were augmented by donations; reading became fashionable; and our people, having no public amusements to divert their attention from study, became better acquainted with books, and in a few years were observed by strangers to be better instructed and more intelligent than people of the same rank generally are in other countries.

When we were about to sign the above-mentioned articles, which were to be binding on us, our heirs, etc., for fifty years, Mr. Brockden, the scrivener, said to us, "You are young men, but it is scarcely probable that any of you will live to see the expiration of the term fixed in the instrument." A number of us, however, are yet living; but the instrument was after a few years rendered null by a charter that incorporated and gave perpetuity to the company.

The objections and reluctances I met with in soliciting the subscriptions made me soon feel the impropriety of presenting one's self as the proposer of any useful project, that might be supposed to raise one's reputation in the smallest degree above that of one's neighbors, when one has need of their assistance to accomplish that project. I therefore put myself as much as I could out of sight, and stated it as a scheme of a *number of friends*, who had requested me to go about and propose it to such as they thought lovers of reading. In this way my affair went on more smoothly, and I ever after practised it on such occasions; and from my frequent successes can heartily

recommend it. The present little sacrifice of your vanity will afterwards be amply repaid. If it remains a while uncertain to whom the merit belongs, some one more vain than yourself will be encouraged to claim it, and then even envy will be disposed to do you justice by plucking those assumed feathers, and restoring them to their right owner.

This library afforded me the means of improvement by constant study, for which I set apart an hour or two each day, and thus repaired in some degree the loss of the learned education my father once intended for me. Reading was the only amusement I allowed myself. I spent no time in taverns, games, or frolics of any kind; and my industry in my business continued as indefatigable as it was necessary. I was indebted for my printing-house; I had a young family coming on to be educated, and I had to contend with for business two printers, who were established in the place before me. My circumstances, however, grew daily easier. My original habits of frugality continuing, and my father having, among his instructions to me when a boy, frequently repeated a proverb of Solomon, "Seest thou a man diligent in his calling, he shall stand before kings, he shall not stand before mean men," I from thence considered industry as a means of obtaining wealth and distinction, which encouraged me, though I did not think that I should ever literally *stand before kings*, which, however, has since happened; for I have stood before *five*, and even had the honor of sitting down with one, the King of Denmark, to dinner.

We have an English proverb that says, "*He that would thrive, must ask his wife.*" It was lucky for me that I had one as much disposed to industry and fru-

ality as myself. She assisted me cheerfully in my usiness, folding and stitching pamphlets, tending hop, purchasing old linen rags for the paper makers, tc., etc. We kept no idle servants, our table was lain and simple, our furniture of the cheapest. For nstance, my breakfast was a long time bread and ilk (no tea), and I ate it out of a twopenny earthen orringer, with a pewter spoon. But mark how luxry will enter families, and make a progress, in spite f principle: being called one morning to breakfast, found it in a China bowl, with a spoon of silver! hey had been bought for me without my knowledge y my wife, and had cost her the enormous sum of hree-and-twenty shillings, for which she had no other xcuse or apology to make, but that she thought *her* usband deserved a silver spoon and China bowl as vell as any of his neighbors. This was the first appearance of plate and China in our house, which afterward, in a course of years, as our wealth increased, augmented gradually to several hundred pounds in value.

I had been religiously educated as a Presbyterian; and though some of the dogmas of that persuasion, such as *the eternal decrees of God, election, reprobation, etc.*, appeared to me unintelligible, others doubtful, and I early absented myself from the public assemblies of the sect, Sunday being my studying day, I never was without some religious principles. I never doubted, for instance, the existence of the Deity; that He made the world, and governed it by his Providence; that the most acceptable service of God was the doing good to man; that our souls are immortal; and that all crime will be punished, and virtue rewarded, either here or hereafter. These I esteemed

the essentials of every religion; and being to be found in all the religions we had in our country, I respected them all, though with different degrees of respect, as I found them more or less mixed with other articles, which, without any tendency to inspire, promote, or confirm morality, served principally to divide us, and make us unfriendly to one another. This respect to all, with an opinion that the worst had some good effects, induced me to avoid all discourse that might tend to lessen the good opinion another might have of his own religion; and as our province increased in people, and new places of worship were continually wanted, and generally erected by voluntary contribution, my mite for such purpose, whatever might be the sect, was never refused.

Though I seldom attended any public worship, I had still an opinion of its propriety, and of its utility when rightly conducted, and I regularly paid my annual subscription for the support of the only Presbyterian minister or meeting we had in Philadelphia. He used to visit me sometimes as a friend, and admonish me to attend his administrations, and I was now and then prevailed on to do so, once for five Sundays successively. Had he been in my opinion a good preacher, perhaps I might have continued, notwithstanding the occasion I had for the Sunday's leisure in my course of study; but his discourses were chiefly either polemic arguments, or explications of the peculiar doctrines of our sect, and were all to me very dry, uninteresting, and unedifying, since not a single moral principle was inculcated or enforced, their aim seeming to be rather to make us Presbyterians than good citizens.

At length he took for his text that verse of the

fourth chapter of Philippians, "*Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, or of good report, if there be any virtue, or any praise, think on these things.*" And I imagined, in a sermon on such a text, we could not miss of having some morality. But he confined himself to five points only, as meant by the apostle, viz.: 1. Keeping holy the Sabbath day. 2. Being diligent in reading the holy Scriptures. 3. Attending duly the public worship. 4. Partaking of the Sacrament. 5. Paying a due respect to God's ministers. These might be all good things; but as they were not the kind of good things that I expected from that text, I despaired of ever meeting with them from any other, was disgusted, and attended his preaching no more. I had some years before composed a little Liturgy, or form of prayer, for my own private use (viz., in 1728), entitled, *Articles of Belief and Acts of Religion.* I returned to the use of this, and went no more to the public assemblies. My conduct might be blamable, but I leave it, without attempting further to excuse it; my present purpose being to relate facts, and not to make apologies for them.

It was about this time I conceived the bold and arduous project of arriving at moral perfection. I wished to live without committing any fault at any time; I would conquer all that either natural inclination, custom, or company might lead me into. As I knew, or thought I knew, what was right and wrong, I did not see why I might not always do the one and avoid the other. But I soon found I had undertaken a task of more difficulty than I had imagined. While my care was employed in guarding against one fault, I was often surprised by another; habit took the ad-

vantage of inattention; inclination was sometimes too strong for reason. I concluded, at length, that the mere speculative conviction that it was our interest to be completely virtuous was not sufficient to prevent our slipping; and that the contrary habits must be broken, and good ones acquired and established, before we can have any dependence on a steady, uniform rectitude of conduct. For this purpose I therefore contrived the following method.

In the various enumerations of the moral virtues I had met with in my reading, I found the catalogue more or less numerous, as different writers included more or fewer ideas under the same name. Temperance, for example, was by some confined to eating and drinking, while by others it was extended to mean the moderating every other pleasure, appetite, inclination, or passion, bodily or mental, even to our avarice and ambition. I proposed to myself, for the sake of clearness, to use rather more names, with fewer ideas annexed to each, than a few names with more ideas; and I included under thirteen names of virtues all that at that time occurred to me as necessary or desirable, and annexed to each a short precept, which fully expressed the extent I gave to its meaning.

These names of virtues, with their precepts were:

1. TEMPERANCE

Eat not to dullness; drink not to elevation.

2. SILENCE

Speak not but what may benefit others or yourself; avoid trifling conversation.

3. Order

Let all your things have their places; let each part of your business have its time.

4. Resolution

Resolve to perform what you ought; perform without fail what you resolve.

5. Frugality

Make no expense but to do good to others or yourself; *i.e.*, waste nothing.

6. Industry

Lose no time; be always employed in something useful; cut off all unnecessary actions.

7. Sincerity

Use no hurtful deceit; think innocently and justly; and, if you speak, speak accordingly.

8. Justice

Wrong none by doing injuries, or omitting the benefits that are your duty.

9. Moderation

Avoid extremes; forbear resenting injuries so much as you think they deserve.

10. Cleanliness

Tolerate no uncleanliness in body, clothes, or habitation.

11. Tranquillity

Be not disturbed at trifles, or at accidents common or unavoidable.

12. CHASTITY

. . . . . .

13. HUMILITY

. . . . . .

My intention being to acquire the *habitude* of all these virtues, I judged it would be well not to distract my attention by attempting the whole at once, but to fix it on one of them at a time; and, when I should be master of that, then to proceed to another, and so on, till I should have gone through the thirteen; and as the previous acquisition of some might facilitate the acquisition of certain others, I arranged them with that view, as they stand above. Temperance first, as it tends to procure that coolness and clearness of head, which is so necessary where constant vigilance was to be kept up, and guard maintained against the unremitting attraction of ancient habits, and the force of perpetual temptations. This being acquired and established, Silence would be more easy; and my desire being to gain knowledge at the same time that I improved in virtue, and considering that in conversation it was obtained rather by the use of the ears than of the tongue, and therefore wishing to break a habit I was getting into of prattling, punning, and joking, which only made me acceptable to trifling company, I gave *Silence* the second place. This and the next, *Order*, I expected would allow me more time for attending to my project and my studies. *Resolution*, once become habitual, would keep me firm in my endeavors to obtain all the subsequent virtues; *Frugality* and Industry freeing me from my remaining debt, and producing affluence and independence, would make more easy the practice of Sincerity and

Justice, etc., etc. Conceiving then, that, agreeably to the advice of Pythagoras in his Golden Verses, daily examination would be necessary, I contrived the following method for conducting that examination.

I made a little book, in which I allotted a page for each of the virtues. I ruled each page with red ink, so as to have seven columns, one for each day of the week, marking each column with a letter for the day.

FORM OF THE PAGES

TEMPERANCE							
EAT NOT TO DULNESS DRINK NOT TO ELEVATION							
	S.	M.	T.	W.	T.	F.	S.
T.							
S.	*	*		*		*	
O.	* *	*	*		*	*	*
R.			*			*	
F.		*			*		
I.			*				
S.							
J.							
M.							
C.							
T.							
C.							
H.							

I crossed these columns with thirteen red lines, marking the beginning of each line with the first letter of one of the virtues, on which line, and in its proper column, I might mark, by a little black spot, every fault I found upon examination to have been committed respecting that virtue upon that day.

I determined to give a week's strict attention to each of the virtues successively. Thus, in the first week, my great guard was to avoid every the least offense against *Temperance*, leaving the other virtues to their ordinary chance, only marking every evening the faults of the day. Thus, if in the first week I could keep my first line, marked T, clear of spots, I supposed the habit of that virtue so much strengthened, and its opposite weakened, that I might venture extending my attention to include the next, and for the following week keep both lines clear of spots. Proceeding thus to the last, I could go through a course complete in thirteen weeks, and four courses in a year. And like him who, having a garden to weed, does not attempt to eradicate all the bad herbs at once, which would exceed his reach and his strength, but works on one of the beds at a time, and, having accomplished the first, proceeds to a second, so I should have, I hoped, the encouraging pleasure of seeing on my pages the progress I made in virtue, by clearing successively my lines of their spots, till in the end, by a number of courses, I should be happy in viewing a clean book, after a thirteen weeks' daily examination.

This my little book had for its motto these lines from Addison's *Cato:*

> "Here will I hold. If there's a power above us
> (And that there is, all nature cries aloud
> Through all her works), He must delight in virtue;
> And that which he delights in must be happy."

Another from Cicero,

> "O vitæ Philosophia dux! O virtutum indagatrix expultrixque vitiorum! Unus dies, bene et ex præceptis tuis actus, peccanti immortalitati est anteponendus."

[O Philosophy, guide of life! O investigator and expeller of crimes! A single day, lived well and in accordance with your precepts, is to be preferred to sinning immortality.]

Another from the Proverbs of Solomon, speaking of wisdom or virtue:

"Length of days is in her right hand, and in her left hand riches and honor. Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace." iii. 16, 17.

And conceiving God to be the fountain of wisdom, I thought it right and necessary to solicit his assistance for obtaining it; to this end I formed the following little prayer, which was prefixed to my tables of examination, for daily use.

"O powerful Goodness! bountiful Father! merciful Guide! Increase in me that wisdom which discovers my truest interest. Strengthen my resolutions to perform what that wisdom dictates. Accept my kind offices to thy other children as the only return in my power for thy continual favors to me."

I used also sometimes a little prayer which I took from Thomson's Poems, viz.:

"Father of light and life, thou Good Supreme!
O teach me what is good; teach me Thyself!
Save me from folly, vanity, and vice,
From every low pursuit; and fill my soul
With knowledge, conscious peace, and virtue pure;
Sacred, substantial, never-fading bliss!"

The precept of *Order* requiring that *every part of my business should have its allotted time*, one page in my little book contained the following scheme of employment for the twenty-four hours of a natural day.

THE MORNING. *Question.* What good shall I do this day?	5	Rise, wash, and address *Powerful Goodness!* Contrive day's business, and take the resolution of the day; prosecute the present study, and breakfast.
	6	
	7	
	8	Work.
	9	
	10	
	11	
NOON.	12	Read, or overlook my accounts, and dine.
	1	
	2	Work.
	3	
	4	
	5	
EVENING. *Question.* What good have I done to-day?	6	Put things in their places. Supper. Music or diversion, or conversation. Examination of the day.
	7	
	8	
	9	
	10	
	11	
	12	
NIGHT.	1	Sleep.
	2	
	3	
	4	

I entered upon the execution of this plan for self-examination, and continued it with occasional intermissions for some time. I was surprised to find myself so much fuller of faults than I had imagined; but I had the satisfaction of seeing them diminish. To avoid the trouble of renewing now and then my little book, which, by scraping out the marks on the paper of old faults to make room for new ones in a new course, became full of holes, I transferred my tables and precepts to the ivory leaves of a memorandum book, on which the lines were drawn with red ink, that made a durable stain, and on those lines I marked my faults with a black lead pencil, which marks I

ıld easily wipe out with a wet sponge. After a ıile I went through one course only in a year, and erward only one in several years, till at length I nitted them entirely, being employed in voyages and siness abroad, with a multiplicity of affairs that terfered; but I always carried my little book with e.

My scheme of ORDER gave me the most trouble; d I found that, though it might be practicable here a man's business was such as to leave him the sposition of his time, that of a journeyman printer, r instance, it was not possible to be exactly obrved by a master, who must mix with the world, and ten receive people of business at their own hours. *rder*, too, with regard to places for things, papers, c., I found extremely difficult to acquire. I had ot been early accustomed to it, and, having an exeeding good memory, I was not so sensible of the inonvenience attending want of method. This arcle, therefore, cost me so much painful attention, nd my faults in it vexed me so much, and I made so ttle progress in amendment, and had such frequent lapses, that I was almost ready to give up the atempt, and content myself with a faulty character that respect, like the man who, in buying an axe of smith, my neighbor, desired to have the whole of s surface as bright as the edge. The smith conented to grind it bright for him if he would turn the heel; he turned, while the smith pressed the broad ce of the axe hard and heavily on the stone, which ade the turning of it very fatiguing. The man me every now and then from the wheel to see how e work went on, and at length would take his axe as was, without further grinding. "No," said the

smith, "turn on, turn on; we shall have it bright by and by; as yet, it is only speckled." "Yes," says the man, "*but I think I like a speckled axe best.*" And I believe this may have been the case with many, who, having, for want of some such means as I employed, found the difficulty of obtaining good and breaking bad habits in other points of vice and virtue, have given up the struggle, and concluded that "*a speckled axe was best;*" for something, that pretended to be reason, was every now and then suggesting to me that such extreme nicety as I exacted of myself might be a kind of foppery in morals, which, if it were known, would make me ridiculous; that a perfect character might be attended with the inconvenience of being envied and hated; and that a benevolent man should allow a few faults in himself, to keep his friends in countenance.

In truth, I found myself incorrigible with respect to Order; and now I am grown old, and my memory bad, I feel very sensibly the want of it. But, on the whole, though I never arrived at the perfection I had been so ambitious of obtaining, but fell far short of it, yet I was, by the endeavor, a better and a happier man than I otherwise should have been if I had not attempted it; as those who aim at perfect writing by imitating the engraved copies, though they never reach the wished-for excellence of those copies, their hand is mended by the endeavor, and is tolerable while it continues fair and legible.

It may be well my posterity should be informed that to this little artifice, with the blessing of God their ancestor owed the constant felicity of his life down to his 79th year, in which this is written. What reverses may attend the remainder is in the hand o

rovidence; but, if they arrive, the reflection on past ppiness enjoyed ought to help his bearing them th more resignation. To Temperance he ascribes s long-continued health, and what is still left to him a good constitution; to Industry and Frugality, the rly easiness of his circumstances and acquisition of s fortune, with all that knowledge that enabled him be a useful citizen, and obtained for him some degree of reputation among the learned; to Sincerity nd Justice, the confidence of his country and the norable employs it conferred upon him; and to the int influence of the whole mass of the virtues, even the imperfect state he was able to acquire them, all at evenness of temper, and that cheerfulness in nversation, which makes his company still sought r, and agreeable even to his younger acquaintance. hope, therefore, that some of my descendants may llow the example and reap the benefit.

It will be remarked that, though my scheme was ot wholly without religion, there was in it no mark f any of the distinguishing tenets of any particular ect. I had purposely avoided them; for, being fully ersuaded of the utility and excellency of my method, nd that it might be serviceable to people in all regions, and intending some time or other to publish , I would not have anything in it that should prejuice any one, of any sect, against it. I purposed riting a little comment on each virtue, in which I ould have shown the advantages of possessing it, nd the mischiefs attending its opposite vice; and I hould have called my book THE ART OF VIRTUE, beause it would have shown the means and manner of btaining virtue, which would have distinguished it om the mere exhortation to be good, that does not

instruct and indicate the means, but is like the apostle's man of verbal charity, who only without showing to the naked and hungry how or where they might get clothes or victuals exhorted them to be fed and clothed. — James ii. 15, 16.

But it so happened that my intention of writing and publishing this comment was never fulfilled. I did, indeed, from time to time, put down short hints of the sentiments, reasonings, etc., to be made use of in it, some of which I have still by me; but the necessary close attention to private business in the earlier part of my life, and public business since, have occasioned my postponing it; for, it being connected in my mind with *a great and extensive project*, that required the whole man to execute, and which an unforeseen succession of employs prevented my attending to, it has hitherto remained unfinished.

In this piece it was my design to explain and enforce this doctrine, that vicious actions are not hurtful because they are forbidden, but forbidden because they are hurtful, the nature of man alone considered; that it was, therefore, every one's interest to be virtuous who wished to be happy even in this world; and I should, from this circumstance (there being always in the world a number of rich merchants, nobility, states, and princes, who have need of honest instruments for the management of their affairs, and such being so rare), have endeavored to convince young persons that no qualities were so likely to make a poor man's fortune as those of probity and integrity.

My list of virtues contained at first but twelve; but a Quaker friend having kindly informed me that I was generally thought proud; that my pride showed itself frequently in conversation; that I was not con-

at with being in the right when discussing any int, but was overbearing, and rather insolent, of hich he convinced me by mentioning several inances; I determined endeavoring to cure myself, if could, of this vice or folly among the rest, and I ided *Humility* to my list, giving an extensive meang to the word.

I cannot boast of much success in acquiring the *ility* of this virtue, but I had a good deal with reard to the *appearance* of it. I made it a rule to forear all direct contradiction to the sentiments of hers, and all positive assertion of my own. I even rbid myself, agreeably to the old laws of our Junto, e use of every word or expression in the language at imported a fixed opinion, such as *certainly, undubtedly*, etc., and I adopted, instead of them, *I conive, I apprehend*, or *I imagine* a thing to be so or so; r it *so appears to me at present*. When another aserted something that I thought an error, I denied yself the pleasure of contradicting him abruptly, nd of showing immediately some absurdity in his roposition; and in answering I began by observing at in certain cases or circumstances his opinion ould be right, but in the present case there *appeared* r *seemed* to me some difference, etc. I soon found e advantage of this change in my manner; the conersations I engaged in went on more pleasantly. he modest way in which I proposed my opinions rocured them a readier reception and less contradicon; I had less mortification when I was found to be the wrong, and I more easily prevailed with others give up their mistakes and join with me when I appened to be in the right.

And this mode, which I at first put on with some

violence to natural inclination, became at length so easy, and so habitual to me, that perhaps for these fifty years past no one has ever heard a dogmatical expression escape me. And to this habit (after my character of integrity) I think it principally owing that I had early so much weight with my fellow-citizens when I proposed new institutions, or alterations in the old, and so much influence in public councils when I became a member; for I was but a bad speaker, never eloquent, subject to much hesitation in my choice of words, hardly correct in language, and yet I generally carried my points.

In reality, there is, perhaps, no one of our natural passions so hard to subdue as *pride*. Disguise it, struggle with it, beat it down, stifle it, mortify it as much as one pleases, it is still alive, and will every now and then peep out and show itself; you will see it, perhaps, often in this history; for, even if I could conceive that I had completely overcome it, I should probably be proud of my humility.

VI

SELF-EDUCATION

AVING mentioned *a great and extensive project* which had conceived, it seems proper that some account ould be here given of that project and its object. s first rise in my mind appears in the following tle paper, accidentally preserved, viz.:

Observations on my reading history, in Library, ay 19, 1731.

"That the great affairs of the world, the wars, revotions, etc., are carried on and affected by parties.

"That the view of these parties is their present eneral interest, or what they take to be such.

"That the different views of these different parties ccasion all confusion.

"That while a party is carrying on a general degn, each man has his particular private interest in iew.

"That as soon as a party has gained its general oint, each member becomes intent upon his parcular interest; which, thwarting others, breaks that arty into divisions, and occasions more confusion.

"That few in public affairs act from a mere view of ie good of their country, whatever they may preend; and, though their actings bring real good to ieir country, yet men primarily considered that ieir own and their country's interest was united, and d not act from a principle of benevolence.

"That fewer still, in public affairs, act with a view the good of mankind.

"There seems to me at present to be great occasion for raising a United Party for Virtue, by forming the virtuous and good men of all nations into a regular body, to be governed by suitable, good, and wise rules, which good and wise men may probably be more unanimous in their obedience to, than common people are to common laws.

"I at present think that whoever attempts this aright, and is well qualified, cannot fail of pleasing God, and of meeting with success. B. F."

Revolving this project in my mind, as to be undertaken hereafter, when my circumstances should afford me the necessary leisure, I put down from time to time, on pieces of paper, such thoughts as occurred to me respecting it. Most of these are lost; but I find one purporting to be the substance of an intended creed, containing, as I thought, the essentials of every known religion, and being free of everything that might shock the professors of any religion. It is expressed in these words, viz.:

"That there is one God, who made all things.

"That He governs the world by his providence.

"That He ought to be worshipped by adoration, prayer, and thanksgiving.

"But that the most acceptable service of God is doing good to man.

"That the soul is immortal.

"And that God will certainly reward virtue and punish vice, either here or hereafter."

My ideas at that time were that the sect should be begun and spread at first among young and single men only; that each person to be initiated should not only declare his assent to such creed, but should have exercised himself with the thirteen weeks' examina-

on and practice of the virtues, as in the before-mentioned model; that the existence of such a society should be kept a secret, till it was become considerable, to prevent solicitations for the admission of improper persons, but that the members should each of them search among his acquaintance for ingenuous, well-disposed youths, to whom, with prudent caution, the scheme should be gradually communicated; that the members should engage to afford their advice, assistance, and support to each other in promoting one another's interests, business, and advancement in life; that, for distinction, we should be called *The Society of the Free and Easy:* free, as being, by the general practice and habit of the virtues, free from the dominion of vice; and particularly by the practice of industry and frugality, free from debt, which exposes a man to confinement, and a species of slavery to his creditors.

This is as much as I can now recollect of the project, except that I communicated it in part to two young men, who adopted it with some enthusiasm; but my then narrow circumstances, and the necessity I was under of sticking close to my business, occasioned my postponing the further prosecution of it at that time; and my multifarious occupations, public and private, induced me to continue postponing, so that it has been omitted till I have no longer strength or activity left sufficient for such an enterprise; though I am still of opinion that it was a practicable scheme, and might have been very useful, by forming a great number of good citizens; and I was not discouraged by the seeming magnitude of the undertaking, as I have always thought that one man of tolerable abilities may work great changes, and accom-

plish great affairs among mankind, if he first forms a good plan, and, cutting off all amusements or other employments that would divert his attention, makes the execution of that same plan his sole study and business.

In 1732 I first published my Almanack, under the name of *Richard Saunders;* it was continued by me about twenty-five years, commonly called *Poor Richard's Almanac.* I endeavored to make it both entertaining and useful; and it accordingly came to be in such demand, that I reaped considerable profit from it, vending annually near ten thousand. And observing that it was generally read, scarce any neighborhood in the province being without it, I considered it as a proper vehicle for conveying instruction among the common people, who bought scarcely any other books; I therefore filled all the little spaces that occurred between the remarkable days in the calendar with proverbial sentences, chiefly such as inculcated industry and frugality as the means of procuring wealth, and thereby securing virtue; it being more difficult for a man in want to act always honestly, as, to use here one of those proverbs, *it is hard for an empty sack to stand upright.*

These proverbs, which contained the wisdom of many ages and nations, I assembled and formed into a connected discourse prefixed to the Almanack of 1757, as the harangue of a wise old man to the people attending an auction. The bringing all these scattered counsels thus into a focus enabled them to make greater impression. The piece, being universally approved, was copied in all the newspapers of the Continent; reprinted in Britain on a broadside, to be stuck up in houses; two translations were made of it

XII Mon. February hath xxviii days.

Man's rich with little, were his Judgment true,
Nature is frugal, and her Wants are few:
Those few Wants answer'd, bring sincere Delights,
But Fools create themselves new Appetites.
Fancy and Pride seek Things at vast Expence,
Which relish not to *Reason* nor to *Sense*
Like Cats in Airpumps, to subsist we strive
On Joys too thin to keep the Soul alive.

M.	W. D.	*Remarkable Days,* Aſpects. *Weather* w.	H. pl	D land	☉ riſes ſets.	*Lunations,* ☽ riſes & ſets
1	7	✶ ☿ ♀ plea	♑ 21	6	48 6	Laſt Quarter.
2	E	Sexageſima.	9	♑	6 47 6	☽ with ☿
3	2	ſant, with	10	♒ 19	6 46 6	Sirius ſo. 8 41
4	3	△ ♄ ♀ wind	11	♒	6 44 6	☽ riſes 42 mo
5	4	7* ſet 1 0 and	12	15	6 43 6	*A good Wife &*
6	5	perhaps ſome	12	28	6 42 6	♄ riſe 9 7
7	6	rain ☌ ☽ ♀	♓ 1		6 40 6	☉ in ♓
8	7		2	24	6 39 6	♀ riſe 5 32
9	E	Shrove Sunday.	3	♓	6 38 6	New ☽ 9 day,
10	2	☿ riſes 1 38	3h	18	6 37 6	at 3 morn.
11	3	Shrove Tueſday	4	♈	6 35 6	☽ with ☌ & ♀.
12	4	Aſh-Wedneſday.	5	12	6 34 6	☽ ſets 8 56 af.
13	5	✶ ☿ ♀ △ ♄ ♀	5h	25	6 33 6	*Health, is a*
14	6	Valentine.	6	♉	6 32 6	*Man's beſt*
15	7	☽ near 7*s	7	17	6 30 6	*Wealth.*
16	E	1 Sund in Lent	8	29	6 29 6	☌ ſets 7 18
17	2	clouds with	9	♊	6 28 6	Firſt Quarter.
18	3	wind and	10	25	6 26 6	Sirius ſo 7 43
19	4	Ember Week.	10	♋	6 25 6	7* ſet 12 0
20	5	□ ☉ ☿ rain	11	21	6 23 6	☽ ſets 4 2 mo
21	6	or ſnow.	12	♌	6 22 6	♄ riſes 8 11
22	7	then change-	1	18	6 20 6	*A quarrelſome*
23	E	2 Sund. in Lent.	2	♍	6 19 6	*Man has no good*
24	2	St. Matthias.	3	18	6 18 6	Full ● 24 day,
25	3	☿ riſe 12 52	3h	♎	6 17 6	10 morn:
26	4	able even to the	4	18	6 15 6	☽ with ♄
27	5	✶ ♄ ☿ very	5	♏	6 14 6	☽ riſe 9 53 aft.
28	6	□ ☿ ♀ end.	6	17	6 13 6	*Neighbours.*

The page here given in facsimile is from the almanac for 1746. The copy from which it is taken belonged to Edward Holyoke, President of Harvard College, who died in 1769 at the age of 80. His son, Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, lived to be over a hundred. In 1746 the old style still held, by which the year began with March, so that February was the twelfth month, as stated in the heading of the page. This was the old Roman usage, which explains the significance of October, November, December.

n French, and great numbers bought by the clergy nd gentry, to distribute gratis among their poor arishioners and tenants. In Pennsylvania, as it dis- ouraged useless expense in foreign superfluities, some hought it had its share of influence in producing that rowing plenty of money which was observable for everal years after its publication.

I considered my newspaper, also, as another means f communicating instruction, and in that view fre- uently reprinted in it extracts from the Spectator, nd other moral writers; and sometimes published ittle pieces of my own, which had been first composed or reading in our Junto. Of these are a Socratic dia- ogue, tending to prove that, whatever might be his parts and abilities, a vicious man could not properly be called a man of sense; and a discourse on self- denial, showing that virtue was not secure till its practice became a habitude, and was free from the opposition of contrary inclinations. These may be found in the papers about the beginning of 1735.

In the conduct of my newspaper, I carefully ex- cluded all libelling and personal abuse, which is of late years become so disgraceful to our country. When- ever I was solicited to insert anything of that kind, and the writers pleaded, as they generally did, the liberty of the press, and that a newspaper was like a stage-coach, in which any one who would pay had a right to a place, my answer was, that I would print the piece separately if desired, and the author might have as many copies as he pleased to distribute him- self, but that I would not take upon me to spread his detraction; and that, having contracted with my sub- scribers to furnish them with what might be either useful or entertaining, I could not fill their papers

with private altercation, in which they had no concern, without doing them manifest injustice. Now, many of our printers make no scruple of gratifying the malice of individuals by false accusations of the fairest characters among ourselves, augmenting animosity even to the producing of duels; and are, moreover, so indiscreet as to print scurrilous reflections on the government of neighboring states, and even on the conduct of our best national allies, which may be attended with the most pernicious consequences. These things I mention as a caution to young printers, and that they may be encouraged not to pollute their presses and disgrace their profession by such infamous practices, but refuse steadily, as they may see by my example that such a course of conduct will not, on the whole, be injurious to their interests.

In 1733 I sent one of my journeymen to Charleston, South Carolina, where a printer was wanting. I furnished him with a press and letters, on an agreement of partnership, by which I was to receive one third of the profits of the business, paying one third of the expense. He was a man of learning, and honest but ignorant in matters of account; and, though he sometimes made me remittances, I could get no account from him, nor any satisfactory state of our partnership while he lived. On his decease, the business was continued by his widow, who, being born and bred in Holland, where, as I have been informed, the knowledge of accounts makes a part of female education, she not only sent me as clear a state as she could find of the transactions past, but continued to account with the greatest regularity and exactness every quarter afterwards, and managed the business with such success, that she not only brought up reputably a

family of children, but, at the expiration of the term, was able to purchase of me the printing-house, and establish her son in it.

I mention this affair chiefly for the sake of recommending that branch of education for our young females, as likely to be of more use to them and their children, in case of widowhood, than either music or dancing, by preserving them from losses by imposition of crafty men, and enabling them to continue, perhaps, a profitable mercantile house, with established correspondence, till a son is grown up fit to undertake and go on with it, to the lasting advantage and enriching of the family.

About the year 1734 there arrived among us from Ireland a young Presbyterian preacher, named Hemphill, who delivered with a good voice, and apparently extempore, most excellent discourses, which drew together considerable numbers of different persuasions, who joined in admiring them. Among the rest, I became one of his constant hearers, his sermons pleasing me, as they had little of the dogmatical kind, but inculcated strongly the practice of virtue, or what in the religious style are called good works. Those, however, of our congregation, who considered themselves as orthodox Presbyterians, disapproved his doctrine, and were joined by most of the old clergy, who arraigned him of heterodoxy before the synod, in order to have him silenced. I became his zealous partisan, and contributed all I could to raise a party in his favor, and we combated for him a while with some hopes of success. There was much scribbling *pro* and *con* upon the occasion; and finding that, though an elegant preacher, he was but a poor writer, I lent him my pen and wrote for him two or three pamphlets,

and one piece in the *Gazette* of April, 1735. Those pamphlets, as is generally the case with controversial writings, though eagerly read at the time, were soon out of vogue, and I question whether a single copy of them now exists.

During the contest an unlucky occurrence hurt his cause exceedingly. One of our adversaries having heard him preach a sermon that was much admired, thought he had somewhere read the sermon before, or at least a part of it. On search, he found that part quoted at length, in one of the *British Reviews*, from a discourse of Dr. Foster's. This detection gave many of our party disgust, who accordingly abandoned his cause, and occasioned our more speedy discomfiture in the synod. I stuck by him, however, as I rather approved his giving us good sermons composed by others, than bad ones of his own manufacture, though the latter was the practice of our common teachers. He afterward acknowledged to me that none of those he preached were his own: adding, that his memory was such as enabled him to retain and repeat any sermon after one reading only. On our defeat, he left us in search elsewhere of better fortune, and I quitted the congregation, never joining it after, though I continued many years my subscription for the support of its ministers.

I had begun in 1733 to study languages; I soon made myself so much a master of the French as to be able to read the books with ease. I then undertook the Italian. An acquaintance, who was also learning it, used often to tempt me to play chess with him. Finding this took up too much of the time I had to spare for study, I at length refused to play any more, unless on this condition, that the victor in every game

should have a right to impose a task, either in parts of the grammar to be got by heart, or in translations, etc., which tasks the vanquished was to perform upon honor, before our next meeting. As we played pretty equally, we thus beat one another into that language. I afterwards, with a little painstaking, acquired as much of the Spanish as to read their books also.

I have already mentioned that I had only one year's instruction in a Latin school, and that when very young, after which I neglected that language entirely. But when I had attained an acquaintance with the French, Italian, and Spanish, I was surprised to find, on looking over a Latin Testament, that I understood so much more of that language than I had imagined, which encouraged me to apply myself again to the study of it, and I met with more success, as those preceding languages had greatly smoothed my way.

From these circumstances, I have thought that there is some inconsistency in our common mode of teaching languages. We are told that it is proper to begin first with the Latin, and, having acquired that, it will be more easy to attain those modern languages which are derived from it; and yet we do not begin with the Greek, in order more easily to acquire the Latin. It is true that, if you can clamber and get to the top of a staircase without using the steps, you will more easily gain them in descending; but certainly, if you begin with the lowest you will with more ease ascend to the top; and I would therefore offer it to the consideration of those who superintend the education of our youth, whether, since many of those who begin with the Latin quit the same after spending some years without having made any great proficiency, and what they have learned becomes almost useless, so

that their time has been lost, it would not have been better to have begun with the French, proceeding to the Italian, etc.; for, though, after spending the same time, they should quit the study of languages and never arrive at the Latin, they would, however, have acquired another tongue or two, that, being in modern use, might be serviceable to them in common life.

After ten years' absence from Boston, and having become easy in my circumstances, I made a journey thither to visit my relations, which I could not sooner well afford. In returning, I called at Newport to see my brother, then settled there with his printing-house. Our former differences were forgotten, and our meeting was very cordial and affectionate. He was fast declining in his health, and requested of me that, in case of his death, which he apprehended not far distant, I would take home his son, then but ten years of age, and bring him up to the printing business. This I accordingly performed, sending him a few years to school before I took him into the office. His mother carried on the business till he was grown up, when I assisted him with an assortment of new types, those of his father being in a manner worn out. Thus it was that I made my brother ample amends for the service I had deprived him of by leaving him so early.

In 1736 I lost one of my sons, a fine boy of four years old, by the small-pox, taken in the common way. I long regretted bitterly, and still regret that I had not given it to him by inoculation. This I mention for the sake of parents who omit that operation, on the supposition that they should never forgive themselves if a child died under it; my example showing that the regret may be the same either way, and that therefore, the safer should be chosen.

Our club, the Junto, was found so useful, and afforded such satisfaction to the members, that several were desirous of introducing their friends, which could not well be done without exceeding what we had settled as a convenient number, viz., twelve. We had from the beginning made it a rule to keep our institution a secret, which was pretty well observed; the intention was to avoid applications of improper persons for admittance, some of whom, perhaps, we might find it difficult to refuse. I was one of those who were against any addition to our number, but, instead of it, made in writing a proposal that every member separately should endeavor to form a subordinate club, with the same rules respecting queries, etc., and without informing them of the connection with the Junto. The advantages proposed were, the improvement of so many more young citizens by the use of our institutions; our better acquaintance with the general sentiments of the inhabitants on any occasion, as the Junto member might propose what queries we should desire, and was to report to the Junto what passed in his separate club; the promotion of our particular interests in business by more extensive recommendation, and the increase of our influence in public affairs, and our power of doing good by spreading through the several clubs the sentiments of the Junto.

The project was approved, and every member undertook to form his club, but they did not all succeed. Five or six only were completed, which were called by different names, as the Vine, the Union, the Band, etc. They were useful to themselves, and afforded us a good deal of amusement, information, and instruction, besides answering, in some considerable degree, our views of influencing the public opinion on par-

ticular occasions, of which I shall give some instances in course of time as they happened.

My first promotion was my being chosen, in 1736, clerk of the General Assembly. The choice was made that year without opposition; but the year following, when I was again proposed (the choice, like that of the members, being annual), a new member made a long speech against me, in order to favor some other candidate. I was, however, chosen, which was the more agreeable to me, as, besides the pay for the immediate service as clerk, the place gave me a better opportunity of keeping up an interest among the members, which secured to me the business of printing the votes, laws, paper money, and other occasional jobs for the public, that, on the whole, were very profitable.

I therefore did not like the opposition of this new member, who was a gentleman of fortune and education, with talents that were likely to give him, in time, great influence in the House, which indeed afterwards happened. I did not, however, aim at gaining his favor by paying any servile respect to him, but, after some time, took this other method. Having heard that he had in his library a certain very scarce and curious book, I wrote a note to him, expressing my desire of perusing that book, and requesting he would do me the favor of lending it to me for a few days. He sent it immediately, and I returned it in about a week with another note, expressing strongly my sense of the favor. When we next met in the House, he spoke to me (which he had never done before), and with great civility; and he ever after manifested a readiness to serve me on all occasions, so that we became great friends, and our friendship continued to

his death. This is another instance of the truth of an old maxim I had learned, which says, "*He that has once done you a kindness will be more ready to do you another, than he whom you yourself have obliged.*" And it shows how much more profitable it is prudently to remove, than to resent, return, and continue inimical proceedings.

In 1737, Colonel Spotwood, late governor of Virginia, and then postmaster-general, being dissatisfied with the conduct of his deputy at Philadelphia, respecting some negligence in rendering, and inexactitude of his accounts, took from him the commission and offered it to me. I accepted it readily, and found it of great advantage; for though the salary was small it facilitated the correspondence that improved my newspaper, increased the number demanded, as well as the advertisements to be inserted, so that it came to afford me a considerable income. My old competitor's newspaper declined proportionably, and I was satisfied without retaliating his refusal, while postmaster, to permit my papers being carried by the riders. Thus he suffered greatly from his neglect in due accounting; and I mention it as a lesson to those young men who may be employed in managing affairs for others, that they should always render accounts, and make remittances, with great clearness and punctuality. The character of observing such a conduct is the most powerful of all recommendations to new employments and increase of business.

I began now to turn my thoughts a little to public affairs, beginning, however, with small matters. The city watch was one of the first things that I conceived to want regulation. It was managed by the constables of the respective wards in turn; the constable warned

a number of housekeepers to attend him for the night. Those who chose never to attend paid him six shillings a year to be excused, which was supposed to be for hiring substitutes, but was, in reality, much more than was necessary for that purpose, and made the constableship a place of profit; and the constable, for a little drink, often got such ragamuffins about him as a watch, that respectable housekeepers did not choose to mix with. Walking the rounds, too, was often neglected, and most of the nights spent in tippling. I thereupon wrote a paper to be read in Junto, representing these irregularities, but insisting more particularly on the inequality of this six-shilling tax of the constables, respecting the circumstances of those who paid it, since a poor widow housekeeper, all whose property to be guarded by the watch did not perhaps exceed the value of fifty pounds, paid as much as the wealthiest merchant, who had thousands of pounds' worth of goods in his stores.

On the whole, I proposed as a more effectual watch, the hiring of proper men to serve constantly in that business; and as a more equitable way of supporting the charge, the levying a tax that should be proportioned to the property. This idea, being approved by the Junto, was communicated to the other clubs, but as arising in each of them; and though the plan was not immediately carried into execution, yet, by preparing the minds of people for the change, it paved the way for the law obtained a few years after, when the members of our clubs were grown into more influence.

About this time I wrote a paper (first to be read in Junto, but it was afterward published) on the different accidents and carelessnesses by which houses were se

on fire, with cautions against them, and means proposed of avoiding them. This was much spoken of as a useful piece, and gave rise to a project, which soon followed it, of forming a company for the more ready extinguishing of fires, and mutual assistance in removing and securing of goods when in danger. Associates in this scheme were presently found, amounting to thirty. Our articles of agreement obliged every member to keep always in good order, and fit for use, a certain number of leather buckets, with strong bags and baskets (for packing and transporting of goods), which were to be brought to every fire; and we agreed to meet once a month and spend a social evening together, in discoursing and communicating such ideas as occurred to us upon the subject of fires, as might be useful in our conduct on such occasions.

The utility of this institution soon appeared, and many more desiring to be admitted than we thought convenient for one company, they were advised to form another, which was accordingly done; and this went on, one new company being formed after another, till they became so numerous as to include most of the inhabitants who were men of property; and now, at the time of my writing this, though upward of fifty years since its establishment, that which I first formed, called the Union Fire Company, still subsists and flourishes, though the first members are all deceased but myself and one, who is older by a year than I am. The small fines that have been paid by members for absence at the monthly meetings have been applied to the purchase of fire-engines, ladders, fire-hooks, and other useful implements for each company, so that I question whether there is a city in the world better provided with the means of put-

ting a stop to beginning conflagrations; and, in fact, since these institutions, the city has never lost by fire more than one or two houses at a time, and the flames have often been extinguished before the house in which they began had been half consumed.

VII

GEORGE WHITEFIELD

In 1739 arrived among us from Ireland the Reverend Mr. Whitefield, who had made himself remarkable there as an itinerant preacher. He was at first permitted to preach in some of our churches; but the clergy, taking a dislike to him, soon refused him their pulpits, and he was obliged to preach in the fields. The multitudes of all sects and denominations that attended his sermons were enormous, and it was matter of speculation to me, who was one of the number, to observe the extraordinary influence of his oratory on his hearers, and how much they admired and respected him, notwithstanding his common abuse of them, by assuring them they were naturally *half beasts and half devils*. It was wonderful to see the change soon made in the manners of our inhabitants. From being thoughtless or indifferent about religion, it seemed as if all the world were growing religious, so that one could not walk through the town in an evening without hearing psalms sung in different families of every street.

And it being found inconvenient to assemble in the open air, subject to its inclemencies, the building of a house to meet in was no sooner proposed, and persons appointed to receive contributions, but sufficient sums were soon received to procure the ground and erect the building, which was one hundred feet long and seventy broad, about the size of Westminster Hall; and the work was carried on with such

spirit as to be finished in a much shorter time than could have been expected. Both house and ground were vested in trustees, expressly for the use of any preacher of any religious persuasion who might desire to say something to the people at Philadelphia; the design in building not being to accommodate any particular sect, but the inhabitants in general; so that even if the Mufti of Constantinople were to send a missionary to preach Mohammedanism to us, he would find a pulpit at his service.

Mr. Whitefield, in leaving us, went preaching all the way through the Colonies to Georgia. The settlement of that province had lately been begun, but, instead of being made with hardy, industrious husbandmen accustomed to labor, the only people fit for such an enterprise, it was with families of broken shopkeepers and other insolvent debtors, many of indolent and idle habits, taken out of the jails, who, being set down in the woods, unqualified for clearing land, and unable to endure the hardships of a new settlement, perished in numbers, leaving many helpless children unprovided for. The sight of their miserable situation inspired the benevolent heart of Mr. Whitefield with the idea of building an Orphan House there, in which they might be supported and educated. Returning northward, he preached up this charity, and made large collections, for his eloquence had a wonderful power over the hearts and purses of his hearers, of which I myself was an instance.

I did not disapprove of the design, but, as Georgia was then destitute of materials and workmen, and it was proposed to send them from Philadelphia at a great expense, I thought it would have been better to have built the house here, and brought the children to

. This I advised; but he was resolute in his first roject, rejected my counsel, and I therefore refused o contribute. I happened soon after to attend one of is sermons, in the course of which I perceived he inended to finish with a collection, and I silently reolved he should get nothing from me. I had in my ocket a handful of copper money, three or four silver ollars, and five pistoles in gold. As he proceeded I egan to soften, and concluded to give the coppers. nother stroke of his oratory made me ashamed of hat, and determined me to give the silver; and he inished so admirably, that I emptied my pocket wholly nto the collector's dish, gold and all. At this sermon here was also one of our club, who, being of my sentiments respecting the building in Georgia, and suspecting a collection might be intended, had, by precaution, emptied his pockets before he came from home. Towards the conclusion of the discourse, however, he felt a strong desire to give, and applied to a neighbor, who stood near him, to borrow some money for the purpose. The application was unfortunately [made] to perhaps the only man in the company who had the firmness not to be affected by the preacher. His answer was, "*At any other time, Friend Hopkinson, I would lend to thee freely; but not now, for thee seems to be out of thy right senses.*"

Some of Mr. Whitefield's enemies affected to suppose that he would apply these collections to his own private emolument; but I, who was intimately acquainted with him (being employed in printing his Sermons and Journals, etc.), never had the least suspicion of his integrity, but am to this day decidedly of opinion that he was in all his conduct a perfectly *honest man;* and methinks my testimony in his favor

ought to have the more weight, as we had no religious connection. He used, indeed, sometimes to pray for my conversion, but never had the satisfaction of believing that his prayers were heard. Ours was a mere civil friendship, sincere on both sides, and lasted to his death.

The following instance will show something of the terms on which we stood. Upon one of his arrivals from England at Boston he wrote to me that he should come soon to Philadelphia, but knew not where he could lodge when there, as he understood his old friend and host, Mr. Benezet, was removed to Germantown. My answer was, "You know my house; if you can make shift with its scanty accommodations, you will be most heartily welcome." He replied, that if I made that kind offer for Christ's sake, I should not miss of a reward. And I returned, "*Don't let me be mistaken; it was not for Christ's sake, but for your sake.*" One of our common acquaintance jocosely remarked, that, knowing it to be the custom of the saints, when they received any favor, to shift the burden of the obligation from off their own shoulders, and place it in heaven, I had contrived to fix it on earth.

The last time I saw Mr. Whitefield was in London, when he consulted me about his Orphan House concern, and his purpose of appropriating it to the establishment of a college.

He had a loud and clear voice, and articulated his words and sentences so perfectly, that he might be heard and understood at a great distance, especially as his auditories, however numerous, observed the most exact silence. He preached one evening from the top of the Court-House steps, which are in the middle of

Market Street, and on the west side of Second Street, which crosses it at right angles. Both streets were filled with his hearers to a considerable distance. Being among the hindmost in Market Street, I had the curiosity to learn how far he could be heard, by retiring backwards down the street towards the river; and I found his voice distinct till I came near Front Street, when some noise in that street obscured it. Imagining then a semicircle, of which my distance should be the radius, and that it were filled with auditors, to each of whom I allowed two square feet, I computed that he might well be heard by more than thirty thousand. This reconciled me to the newspaper accounts of his having preached to twenty-five thousand people in the fields, and to the ancient histories of generals haranguing whole armies, of which I had sometimes doubted.

By hearing him often, I came to distinguish easily between sermons newly composed, and those which he had often preached in the course of his travels. His delivery of the latter was so improved by frequent repetitions that every accent, every emphasis, every modulation of voice was so perfectly well turned and well placed, that, without being interested in the subject, one could not help being pleased with the discourse; a pleasure of much the same kind with that received from an excellent piece of music. This is an advantage itinerant preachers have over those who are stationary, as the latter cannot well improve their delivery of a sermon by so many rehearsals.

His writing and printing from time to time gave great advantage to his enemies; unguarded expressions, and even erroneous opinions, delivered in preaching, might have been afterwards explained or qualified by

supposing others that might have accompanied them, or they might have been denied; but *litera scripta manet.* Critics attacked his writings violently, and with so much appearance of reason as to diminish the number of his votaries and prevent their increase; so that I am of opinion if he had never written anything, he would have left behind him a much more numerous and important sect, and his reputation might in that case have been still growing, even after his death, as there being nothing of his writing on which to found a censure and give him a lower character, his proselytes would be left at liberty to feign for him as great a variety of excellences as their enthusiastic admiration might wish him to have possessed.

My business was now continually augmenting, and my circumstances growing daily easier, my newspaper having become very profitable, as being for a time almost the only one in this and the neighboring provinces. I experienced, too, the truth of the observation, "*that after getting the first hundred pound, it is more easy to get the second,*" money itself being of a prolific nature.

VIII

BEGINNING OF PUBLIC LIFE

THE partnership at Carolina having succeeded, I was encouraged to engage in others, and to promote several of my workmen, who had behaved well, by establishing them with printing-houses in different colonies, on the same terms with that in Carolina. Most of them did well, being enabled at the end of our term, six years, to purchase the types of me and go on working for themselves, by which means several families were raised. Partnerships often finish in quarrels; but I was happy in this, that mine were all carried on and ended amicably, owing, I think, a good deal to the precaution of having very explicitly settled, in our articles, everything to be done by or expected from each partner, so that there was nothing to dispute, which precaution I would therefore recommend to all who enter into partnerships; for, whatever esteem partners may have for, and confidence in each other at the time of the contract, little jealousies and disgusts may arise, with ideas of inequality in the care and burden of the business, etc., which are attended often with breach of friendship and of the connection, perhaps with lawsuits and other disagreeable consequences.

I had, on the whole, abundant reason to be satisfied with my being established in Pennsylvania. There were, however, two things that I regretted, there being no provision for defence, nor for a complete education of youth; no militia, nor any college. I therefore, in

1743, drew up a proposal for establishing an academy; and at that time, thinking the Reverend Mr. Peters, who was out of employ, a fit person to superintend such an institution, I communicated the project to him; but he, having more profitable views in the service of the proprietaries, which succeeded, declined the undertaking; and, not knowing another at that time suitable for such a trust, I let the scheme lie a while dormant. I succeeded better the next year, 1744, in proposing and establishing a Philosophical Society. The paper I wrote for that purpose will be found among my writings, when collected.

With respect to defence, Spain having been several years at war against Great Britain, and being at length joined by France, which brought us into great danger, and the labored and long-continued endeavor of our governor, Thomas, to prevail with our Quaker Assembly to pass a militia law, and make other provisions for the security of the province, having proved abortive, I determined to try what might be done by a voluntary association of the people. To promote this, I first wrote and published a pamphlet, entitled PLAIN TRUTH, in which I stated our defenceless situation in strong lights, with the necessity of union and discipline for our defence, and promised to propose in a few days an association, to be generally signed for that purpose. The pamphlet had a sudden and surprising effect. I was called upon for the instrument of association, and having settled the draft of it with a few friends, I appointed a meeting of the citizens in the large building before mentioned. The house was pretty full; I had prepared a number of printed copies, and provided pens and ink dispersed all over the room. I harangued them a little on the subject, read

e paper, and explained it, and then distributed the pies, which were eagerly signed, not the least objec-on being made.

When the company separated, and the papers were llected, we found above twelve hundred hands; and her copies being dispersed in the country, the sub-ribers amounted at length to upward of ten thou-nd. These all furnished themselves as soon as they uld with arms, formed themselves into companies d regiments, chose their own officers, and met every ek to be instructed in the manual exercise, and her parts of military discipline. The women, by bscriptions among themselves, provided silk colors, hich they presented to the companies, painted with fferent devices and mottoes, which I supplied.

The officers of the companies composing the Phila-lphia regiment, being met, chose me for their colo-l; but, conceiving myself unfit, I declined that ation, and recommended Mr. Lawrence, a fine per-n, and man of influence, who was accordingly ap-inted. I then proposed a lottery to defray the ex-nse of building a battery below the town, and rnishing it with cannon. It filled expeditiously, and e battery was soon erected, the merlons being framed logs and filled with earth. We bought some old nnon from Boston, but these not being sufficient, e wrote to England for more, soliciting, at the same me, our proprietaries for some assistance, though thout much expectation of obtaining it.

Meanwhile Colonel Lawrence, William Allen, bram Taylor, Esquire, and myself were sent to New ork by the associators, commissioned to borrow some nnon of Governor Clinton. He at first refused us remptorily; but at dinner with his council, where

there was great drinking of Madeira wine, as the cus-
tom of that place then was, he softened by degrees
and said he would lend us six. After a few more
bumpers he advanced to ten; and at length he very
good-naturedly conceded eighteen. They were fine
cannon, eighteen-pounders, with their carriages, which
we soon transported and mounted on our battery
where the associators kept a nightly guard while the
war lasted, and among the rest I regularly took my
turn of duty there as a common soldier.

My activity in these operations was agreeable to
the governor and council; they took me into confi-
dence, and I was consulted by them in every measure
wherein their concurrence was thought useful to the
association. Calling in the aid of religion, I proposed
to them the proclaiming a fast, to promote reforma-
tion, and implore the blessing of Heaven on our under-
taking. They embraced the motion; but, as it was
the first fast ever thought of in the province, the
secretary had no precedent from which to draw the
proclamation. My education in New England, where
a fast is proclaimed every year, was here of some
advantage: I drew it in the accustomed style; it was
translated into German, printed in both languages
and divulged through the province. This gave the
clergy of the different sects an opportunity of in-
fluencing their congregations to join in the associa-
tion, and it would probably have been general among
all but Quakers if the peace had not soon intervened.

It was thought by some of my friends that, by my
activity in these affairs, I should offend that sect, and
thereby lose my interest in the Assembly of the pro-
vince, where they formed a great majority. A young
gentleman, who had likewise some friends in the

ouse, and wished to succeed me as their clerk, ac-
ainted me that it was decided to displace me at the
ext election; and he, therefore, in good will, advised
e to resign, as more consistent with my honor than
eing turned out. My answer to him was, that I had
ad or heard of some public man who made it a rule
ever to ask for an office, and never to refuse one
hen offered to him. "I approve," says I, "of his
ule, and will practise it with a small addition: I
hall never *ask*, never *refuse*, nor ever *resign* an office.
they will have my office of clerk to dispose of to an-
ther, they shall take it from me. I will not, by giving
up, lose my right of some time or other making
eprisals on my adversaries." I heard, however, no
ore of this; I was chosen again unanimously as usual
t the next election. Possibly, as they disliked my
ate intimacy with the members of council, who had
oined the governors in all the disputes about military
reparations, with which the House had long been
arassed, they might have been pleased if I would
oluntarily have left them; but they did not care to
isplace me on account merely of my zeal for the as-
ociation, and they could not well give another reason.
Indeed, I had some cause to believe that the de-
nce of the country was not disagreeable to any of
hem, provided they were not required to assist in it.
nd I found that a much greater number of them
han I could have imagined, though against offensive
ar, were clearly for the defensive. Many pamphlets
ro and *con* were published on the subject, and some
y good Quakers, in favor of defence, which I believe
onvinced most of their younger people.

A transaction in our fire company gave me some
sight into their prevailing sentiments. It had been

proposed that we should encourage the scheme for building a battery by laying out the present stock, then about sixty pounds, in tickets of the lottery. By our rules, no money could be disposed of till the next meeting after the proposal. The company consisted of thirty members, of which twenty-two were Quakers, and eight only of other persuasions. We eight punctually attended the meeting; but though we thought that some of the Quakers would join us, we were by no means sure of a majority. Only one Quaker, Mr. James Morris, appeared to oppose the measure. He expressed much sorrow that it had ever been proposed, as he said *Friends* were all against it, and it would create such discord as might break up the company. We told him that we saw no reason for that; we were the minority, and if *Friends* were against the measure, and outvoted us, we must and should, agreeably to the usage of all societies, submit. When the hour for business arrived it was moved to put the vote; he allowed we might then do it by the rules, but, as he could assure us that a number of members intended to be present for the purpose of opposing it, it would be but candid to allow a little time for their appearing.

While we were disputing this, a waiter came to tell me two gentlemen below desired to speak with me. I went down, and found they were two of our Quaker members. They told me there were eight of them assembled at a tavern just by; that they were determined to come and vote with us if there should be occasion, which they hoped would not be the case, and desired we would not call for their assistance if we could do without it, as their voting for such a measure might embroil them with their elders and friends

ing thus secure of a majority, I went up, and after ittle seeming hesitation, agreed to a delay of an- ier hour. This Mr. Morris allowed to be extremely r. Not one of his opposing friends appeared, at ich he expressed great surprise; and at the expira- n of the hour, we carried the resolution eight to e; and as, of the twenty-two Quakers, eight were ady to vote with us, and thirteen, by their absence, nifested that they were not inclined to oppose the easure, I afterwards estimated the proportion of akers sincerely against defence as one to twenty- e only; for these were all regular members of that ciety, and in good reputation among them, and had e notice of what was proposed at that meeting.

The honorable and learned Mr. Logan, who had al- ys been of that sect, was one who wrote an address them declaring his approbation of defensive war, d supporting his opinion by many strong argu- ents. He put into my hands sixty pounds to be laid t in lottery tickets for the battery, with directions apply what prizes might be drawn wholly to that rvice. He told me the following anecdote of his old aster, William Penn, respecting defence. He came er from England, when a young man, with that pro- ietary, and as his secretary. It was war time, and eir ship was chased by an armed vessel, supposed to an enemy. Their captain prepared for defence; t told William Penn, and his company of Quakers, at he did not expect their assistance, and they might tire into the cabin, which they did, except James gan, who chose to stay upon deck, and was quartered a gun. The supposed enemy proved a friend, so ere was no fighting; but when the secretary went wn to communicate the intelligence, William Penn

rebuked him severely for staying upon deck, and undertaking to assist in defending the vessel, contrary to the principles of *Friends*, especially as it had not been required by the captain. This reproof, being before all the company, piqued the secretary, who answered, "*I being thy servant, why did thee not order me to come down? But thee was willing enough that I should stay and help to fight the ship when thee thought there was danger.*"

My being many years in the Assembly, the majority of which were constantly Quakers, gave me frequent opportunities of seeing the embarrassment given them by their principle against war, whenever application was made to them, by order of the crown, to grant aids for military purposes. They were unwilling to offend government, on the one hand, by a direct refusal; and their friends, the body of the Quakers, on the other, by a compliance contrary to their principles hence a variety of evasions to avoid complying, and modes of disguising the compliance when it became unavoidable. The common mode at last was, to grant money under the phrase of its being "*for the king's use*," and never to inquire how it was applied.

But if the demand was not directly from the crown that phrase was found not so proper, and some other was to be invented. As, when powder was wanting (I think it was for the garrison at Louisburg), and the government of New England solicited a grant of some from Pennsylvania, which was much urged on the House by Governor Thomas, they could not grant money to buy powder, because that was an ingredient of war; but they voted an aid to New England of three thousand pounds, to be put into the hands of the governor, and appropriated it for the purchasing

bread, flour, wheat, or *other grain*. Some of the uncil, desirous of giving the House still further em- rrassment, advised the governor not to accept pro- ion, as not being the thing he had demanded; but replied, "I shall take the money, for I understand ry well their meaning; other grain is gunpowder," ich he accordingly bought, and they never ob- ted to it.

It was in allusion to this fact that when, in our fire mpany, we feared the success of our proposal in vor of the lottery, and I had said to my friend Mr. ng, one of our members, "If we fail, let us move the rchase of a fire-engine with the money; the Quakers n have no objection to that; and then, if you nomi- te me and I you as a committee for that purpose, we ll buy a great gun, which is certainly a *fire-engine*." see," says he, "you have improved by being so ng in the Assembly; your equivocal project would just a match for their wheat or *other grain*."

These embarrassments that the Quakers suffered om having established and published it as one of eir principles that no kind of war was lawful, and ich, being once published, they could not after- ards, however they might change their minds, easily t rid of, reminds me of what I think a more prudent nduct in another sect among us, that of the Dunkers. was acquainted with one of its founders, Michael elfare, soon after it appeared. He complained to e that they were grievously calumniated by the alots of other persuasions, and charged with abomi- ble principles and practices, to which they were ter strangers. I told him this had always been the se with new sects, and that, to put a stop to such ouse, I imagined it might be well to publish the arti-

cles of their belief, and the rules of their discipline. He said that it had been proposed among them, but not agreed to, for this reason: "When we were first drawn together as a society," says he, "it has pleased God to enlighten our minds so far as to see that some doctrines, which we once esteemed truths, were errors, and that others, which we had esteemed errors, were real truths. From time to time He has been pleased to afford us farther light, and our principles have been improving, and our errors diminishing. Now we are not sure that we are arrived at the end of this progression, and at the perfection of spiritual or theological knowledge; and we fear that, if we should once print our confession of faith, we should feel ourselves as if bound and confined by it, and perhaps be unwilling to receive farther improvement, and our successors still more so, as conceiving what we their elders and founders had done, to be something sacred never to be departed from."

This modesty in a sect is perhaps a singular instance in the history of mankind, every other sect supposing itself in possession of all truth, and that those who differ are so far in the wrong; like a man travelling in foggy weather, those at some distance before him on the road he sees wrapped up in the fog, as well as those behind him, and also the people in the fields on each side, but near him all appears clear, though in truth he is as much in the fog as any of them. To avoid this kind of embarrassment, the Quakers have of late years been gradually declining the public service in the Assembly and in the magistracy, choosing rather to quit their power than their principle.

In order of time, I should have mentioned before that having, in 1742, invented an open stove for the

etter warming of rooms, and at the same time saving fuel, as the fresh air admitted was warmed in entering, I made a present of the model to Mr. Robert Grace, one of my early friends, who, having an iron-furnace, found the casting of the plates for these stoves a profitable thing, as they were growing in demand. To promote that demand, I wrote and published a pamphlet, entitled "*An Account of the new-invented Pennsylvania Fireplaces; wherein their Construction and Manner of Operation is particularly explained; their Advantages above every other Method of warming Rooms demonstrated; and all Objections that have been raised against the Use of them answered and obviated,*" etc. This pamphlet had a good effect. Governor Thomas was so pleased with the construction of this stove, as described in it, that he offered to give me a patent for the sole vending of them for a term of years; but I declined it from a principle which has ever weighed with me on such occasions, viz., *That, as we enjoy great advantages from the inventions of others, we should be glad of an opportunity to serve others by any invention of ours; and this we should do freely and generously.*

An ironmonger in London, however, assuming a good deal of my pamphlet, and working it up into his own, and making some small changes in the machine, which rather hurt its operation, got a patent for it there, and made, as I was told, a little fortune by it. And this is not the only instance of patents taken out for my inventions by others, though not always with the same success, which I never contested, as having no desire of profiting by patents myself, and hating disputes. The use of these fireplaces in very many houses, both of this and the neighboring colonies, has been, and is, a great saving of wood to the inhabitants.

IX

A PUBLIC-SPIRITED GENTLEMAN

PEACE being concluded, and the association business therefore at an end, I turned my thoughts again to the affair of establishing an academy. The first step I took was to associate in the design a number of active friends, of whom the Junto furnished a good part; the next was to write and publish a pamphlet, entitled *Proposals relating to the Education of Youth in Pennsylvania*. This I distributed among the principal inhabitants gratis; and as soon as I could suppose their minds a little prepared by the perusal of it, I set on foot a subscription for opening and supporting an academy; it was to be paid in quotas yearly for five years; by so dividing it, I judged the subscription might be larger, and I believe it was so, amounting to no less, if I remember right, than five thousand pounds.

In the introduction to these proposals, I stated their publication, not as an act of mine, but of some *public-spirited gentlemen*, avoiding as much as I could, according to my usual rule, the presenting myself to the public as the author of any scheme for their benefit.

The subscribers, to carry the project into immediate execution, chose out of their number twenty-four trustees, and appointed Mr. Francis, then attorney-general, and myself to draw up constitutions for the government of the academy; which being done and signed, a house was hired, masters engaged, and the schools opened, I think, in the same year, 1749.

The scholars increasing fast, the house was soon ound too small, and we were looking out for a piece f ground, properly situated, with intention to build, hen Providence threw into our way a large house eady built, which, with a few alterations, might well erve our purpose. This was the building before nentioned, erected by the hearers of Mr. White- ield, and was obtained for us in the following man- er.

It is to be noted that the contributions to this uilding being made by people of different sects, care vas taken in the nomination of trustees, in whom the uilding and ground was to be vested, that a predom- nancy should not be given to any sect, lest in time hat predominancy might be a means of appropriat- ng the whole to the use of such sect, contrary to the riginal intention. It was therefore that one of each ect was appointed, viz., one Church-of-England an, one Presbyterian, one Baptist, one Moravian, tc., those, in case of vacancy by death, were to fill it by election from among the contributors. The Mo- avian happened not to please his colleagues, and on his death they resolved to have no other of that sect. The difficulty then was, how to avoid having two of some other sect, by means of the new choice.

Several persons were named, and for that reason not agreed to. At length one mentioned me, with the observation that I was merely an honest man, and of no sect at all, which prevailed with them to choose me. The enthusiasm which existed when the house was built had long since abated, and its trustees had not been able to procure fresh contributions for pay- ing the ground-rent, and discharging some other debts the building had occasioned, which embar-

rassed them greatly. Being now a member of both sets of trustees, that for the building and that for the academy, I had a good opportunity of negotiating with both, and brought them finally to an agreement, by which the trustees for the building were to cede it to those of the academy, the latter undertaking to discharge the debt, to keep forever open in the building a large hall for occasional preachers, according to the original intention, and maintain a free school for the instruction of poor children. Writings were accordingly drawn, and on paying the debts the trustees of the academy were put in possession of the premises; and by dividing the great and lofty hall into stories, and different rooms above and below for the several schools, and purchasing some additional ground, the whole was soon made fit for our purpose, and the scholars removed into the building. The care and trouble of agreeing with the workmen, purchasing materials, and superintending the work, fell upon me; and I went through it the more cheerfully, as it did not then interfere with my private business, having the year before taken a very able, industrious, and honest partner, Mr. David Hall, with whose character I was well acquainted, as he had worked for me four years. He took off my hands all care of the printing office, paying me punctually my share of the profits. This partnership continued eighteen years, successfully for us both.

The trustees of the academy, after a while, were incorporated by a charter from the governor; their funds were increased by contributions in Britain and grants of land from the proprietaries, to which the Assembly has since made considerable addition; and thus was established the present University of Phila-

elphia. I have been continued one of its trustees rom the beginning, now near forty years, and have ad the very great pleasure of seeing a number of the outh who have received their education in it, dis-inguished by their improved abilities, serviceable in ublic stations, and ornaments to their country.

When I disengaged myself, as above mentioned, rom private business, I flattered myself that, by the ufficient though moderate fortune I had acquired, I ad secured leisure during the rest of my life for philo-ophical studies and amusements. I purchased all Dr. Spence's apparatus, who had come from England o lecture here, and I proceeded in my electrical ex-periments with great alacrity; but the public, now considering me as a man of leisure, laid hold of me or their purposes, every part of our civil govern-ment, and almost at the same time imposing some duty upon me. The governor put me into the com-mission of the peace; the corporation of the city chose me of the common council, and soon after an alderman; and the citizens at large chose me a bur-gess to represent them in Assembly. This latter station was the more agreeable to me, as I was at length tired with sitting there to hear debates, in which, as clerk, I could take no part, and which were often so unentertaining that I was induced to amuse myself with making magic squares or circles, or any-thing to avoid weariness; and I conceived my be-coming a member would enlarge my power of doing good. I would not, however, insinuate that my am-bition was not flattered by all these promotions; it certainly was; for, considering my low beginning, they were great things to me; and they were still more pleasing, as being so many spontaneous testimonies

of the public good opinion, and by me entirely unsolicited.

The office of justice of the peace I tried a little, by attending a few courts, and sitting on the bench to hear causes; but finding that more knowledge of the common law than I possessed was necessary to act in that station with credit, I gradually withdrew from it, excusing myself by my being obliged to attend the higher duties of a legislator in the Assembly. My election to this trust was repeated every year for ten years, without my ever asking any elector for his vote, or signifying, either directly, or indirectly any desire of being chosen. On taking my seat in the House, my son was appointed their clerk.

The year following, a treaty being to be held with the Indians at Carlisle, the governor sent a message to the House, proposing that they should nominate some of their members, to be joined with some members of council, as commissioners for that purpose. The House named the speaker (Mr. Norris) and myself; and, being commissioned, we went to Carlisle, and met the Indians accordingly.

As those people are extremely apt to get drunk, and, when so, are very quarrelsome and disorderly, we strictly forbade the selling any liquor to them; and when they complained of this restriction, we told them that if they would continue sober during the treaty, we would give them plenty of rum when business was over. They promised this, and they kept their promise because they could get no liquor, and the treaty was conducted very orderly, and concluded to mutual satisfaction. They then claimed and received the rum; this was in the afternoon: they were near one hundred men, women, and children, and

ere lodged in temporary cabins, built in the form of square, just without the town. In the evening, earing a great noise among them, the commis- oners walked out to see what was the matter. We und they had made a great bonfire in the middle the square; they were all drunk, men and women, uarrelling and fighting. Their dark-colored bodies, alf naked, seen only by the gloomy light of the bon- re, running after and beating one another with fire- rands, accompanied by their horrid yellings, formed scene the most resembling our ideas of hell that ould well be imagined; there was no appeasing the umult, and we retired to our lodging. At midnight number of them came thundering at our door, de- anding more rum, of which we took no notice.

The next day, sensible they had misbehaved in iving us that disturbance, they sent three of their ld counsellors to make their apology. The orator cknowledged the fault, but laid it upon the rum; and hen endeavored to excuse the rum by saying, "*The Great Spirit, who made all things, made everything for ome use, and whatever use he designed anything for, hat use it should always be put to. Now, when he nade rum, he said, 'Let this be for the Indians to get drunk with,' and it must be so.*" And, indeed, if it be he design of Providence to extirpate these savages n order to make room for cultivators of the earth, it eems not improbable that rum may be the appointed neans. It has already annihilated all the tribes who ormerly inhabited the sea-coast.

In 1751, Dr. Thomas Bond, a particular friend of nine, conceived the idea of establishing a hospital in Philadelphia (a very beneficent design, which has been ascribed to me, but was originally his) for the

reception and cure of poor sick persons, whether inhabitants of the province or strangers. He was zealous and active in endeavoring to procure subscriptions for it, but the proposal being a novelty in America, and at first not well understood, he met but with small success.

At length he came to me with the compliment that he found there was no such thing as carrying a public-spirited project through without my being concerned in it. "For," says he, "I am often asked by those to whom I propose subscribing, Have you consulted Franklin upon this business? And what does he think of it? And when I tell them that I have not (supposing it rather out of your line), they do not subscribe, but say they will consider of it." I inquired into the nature and probable utility of his scheme, and receiving from him a very satisfactory explanation, I not only subscribed to it myself, but engaged heartily in the design of procuring subscriptions from others. Previously, however, to the solicitation I endeavored to prepare the minds of the people by writing on the subject in the newspapers, which was my usual custom in such cases, but which he had omitted.

The subscriptions afterwards were more free and generous; but, beginning to flag, I saw they would be insufficient without some assistance from the Assembly, and therefore proposed to petition for it, which was done. The country members did not at first relish the project; they objected that it could only be serviceable to the city, and therefore the citizens alone should be at the expense of it; and they doubted whether the citizens themselves generally approved of it. My allegation on the contrary, that

it met with such approbation as to leave no doubt of our being able to raise two thousand pounds by voluntary donations, they considered as a most extravagant supposition, and utterly impossible.

On this I formed my plan; and, asking leave to bring in a bill for incorporating the contributors according to the prayer of their petition, and granting them a blank sum of money, which leave was obtained chiefly on the consideration that the House could throw the bill out if they did not like it, I drew it so as to make the important clause a conditional one, viz., "And be it enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that when the said contributors shall have met and chosen their managers and treasurer, *and shall have raised by their contributions a capital stock of —— value* (the yearly interest of which is to be applied to the accommodating of the sick poor in the said hospital, free of charge for diet, attendance, advice, and medicines), *and shall make the same appear to the satisfaction of the speaker of the Assembly for the time being*, that *then* it shall and may be lawful for the said speaker, and he is hereby required, to sign an order on the provincial treasurer for the payment of two thousand pounds, in two yearly payments, to the treasurer of the said hospital, to be applied to the founding, building, and finishing of the same."

This condition carried the bill through; for the members who had opposed the grant, and now conceived they might have the credit of being charitable without the expense, agreed to its passage; and then, in soliciting subscriptions among the people, we urged the conditional promise of the law as an additional motive to give, since every man's donation would be doubled; thus the clause worked both ways. The

subscriptions accordingly soon exceeded the requisite sum, and we claimed and received the public gift, which enabled us to carry the design into execution. A convenient and handsome building was soon erected; the institution has by constant experience been found useful, and flourishes to this day; and I do not remember any of my political manœuvres, the success of which gave me at the time more pleasure, or wherein, after thinking of it, I more easily excused myself for having made some use of cunning.

It was about this time that another projector, the Rev. Gilbert Tennent, came to me with a request that I would assist him in procuring a subscription for erecting a new meeting-house. It was to be for the use of a congregation he had gathered among the Presbyterians, who were originally disciples of Mr. Whitefield. Unwilling to make myself disagreeable to my fellow-citizens by too frequently soliciting their contributions, I absolutely refused. He then desired I would furnish him with a list of the names of persons I knew by experience to be generous and public-spirited. I thought it would be unbecoming in me, after their kind compliance with my solicitations, to mark them out to be worried by other beggars, and therefore refused also to give such a list. He then desired I would at least give him my advice. "That I will readily do," said I; "and, in the first place, I advise you to apply to all those whom you know will give something; next, to those whom you are uncertain whether they will give anything or not, and show them the list of those who have given; and, lastly, do not neglect those who you are sure will give nothing, for in some of them you may be mistaken."

He laughed and thanked me, and said he would take my advice. He did so, for he asked of *everybody*, and he obtained a much larger sum than he expected, with which he erected the capacious and very elegant meeting-house that stands in Arch Street.

X

A PHILADELPHIA CITIZEN

Our city, though laid out with a beautiful regularity, the streets large, straight, and crossing each other at right angles, had the disgrace of suffering those streets to remain long unpaved, and in wet weather the wheels of heavy carriages ploughed them into a quagmire, so that it was difficult to cross them, and in dry weather the dust was offensive. I had lived near what was called the Jersey Market, and saw with pain the inhabitants wading in mud while purchasing their provisions. A strip of ground down the middle of that market was at length paved with brick, so that, being once in the market, they had firm footing, but were often over shoes in dirt to get there. By talking and writing on the subject, I was at length instrumental in getting the street paved with stone between the market and the bricked foot pavement, that was on each side next the houses. This, for some time, gave an easy access to the market dry-shod; but the rest of the street not being paved, whenever a carriage came out of the mud upon this pavement, it shook off and left its dirt upon it, and it was soon covered with mire, which was not removed, the city as yet having no scavengers.

After some inquiry, I found a poor, industrious man, who was willing to undertake keeping the pavement clean, by sweeping it twice a week, carrying off the dirt from before all the neighbors' doors, for the sum of sixpence per month, to be paid by each house

then wrote and printed a paper setting forth the advantages to the neighborhood that might be obtained y this small expense; the greater ease in keeping ur houses clean, so much dirt not being brought in y people's feet; the benefit to the shops by more cus- om, etc., etc., as buyers could more easily get at hem; and by not having, in windy weather, the dust lown in upon their goods, etc., etc. I sent one of hese papers to each house, and in a day or two went ound to see who would subscribe an agreement to ay these sixpences; it was unanimously signed, and or a time well executed. All the inhabitants of the ity were delighted with the cleanliness of the pave- nent that surrounded the market, it being a conven- ence to all, and this raised a general desire to have all he streets paved, and made the people more willing o submit to a tax for that purpose.

After some time I drew a bill for paving the city, nd brought it into the Assembly. It was just before went to England, in 1757, and did not pass till I vas gone, and then with an alteration in the mode of ssessment, which I thought not for the better, but vith an additional provision for lighting as well as aving the streets, which was a great improvement. t was by a private person, the late Mr. John Clifton, is giving a sample of the utility of lamps, by placing ne at his door, that the people were first impressed vith the idea of enlighting all the city. The honor f this public benefit has also been ascribed to me, ut it belongs truly to that gentleman. I did but ollow his example, and have only some merit to laim respecting the form of our lamps, as differing rom the globe lamps we were at first supplied with rom London. Those we found inconvenient in these

respects: they admitted no air below; the smoke, therefore, did not readily go out above, but circulated in the globe, lodged on its inside, and soon obstructed the light they were intended to afford; giving, besides, the daily trouble of wiping them clean; and an accidental stroke on one of them would demolish it and render it totally useless. I therefore suggested the composing them of four flat panes, with a long funnel above to draw up the smoke, and crevices admitting air below, to facilitate the ascent of the smoke; by this means they were kept clean, and did not grow dark in a few hours, as the London lamps do, but continued bright till morning, and an accidental stroke would generally break but a single pane, easily repaired.

I have sometimes wondered that the Londoners did not, from the effect holes in the bottom of the globe lamps used at Vauxhall have in keeping them clean, learn to have such holes in their street lamps. But, these holes being made for another purpose, viz., to communicate flame more suddenly to the wick by a little flax hanging down through them, the other use, of letting in air, seems not to have been thought of; and therefore, after the lamps have been lit a few hours, the streets of London are very poorly illuminated.

The mention of these improvements puts me in mind of one I proposed, when in London, to Dr. Fothergill, who was among the best men I have known, and a great promoter of useful projects. I had observed that the streets, when dry, were never swept, and the light dust carried away; but it was suffered to accumulate till wet weather reduced it to mud, and then, after lying some days so deep on the

pavement that there was no crossing but in paths kept clean by poor people with brooms, it was with great labor raked together and thrown up into carts open above, the sides of which suffered some of the slush at every jolt on the pavement to shake out and fall, sometimes to the annoyance of foot-passengers. The reason given for not sweeping the dusty streets was, that the dust would fly into the windows of shops and houses.

An accidental occurrence had instructed me how much sweeping might be done in a little time. I found at my door in Craven Street, one morning, a poor woman sweeping my pavement with a birch broom; she appeared very pale and feeble, as just come out of a fit of sickness. I asked who employed her to sweep there; she said, "Nobody; but I am very poor and in distress, and I sweeps before gentlefolkses doors, and hopes they will give me something." I bid her sweep the whole street clean, and I would give her a shilling; this was at nine o'clock; at twelve she came for the shilling. From the slowness I saw at first in her working I could scarce believe that the work was done so soon, and sent my servant to examine it, who reported that the whole street was swept perfectly clean, and all the dust placed in the gutter, which was in the middle; and the next rain washed it quite away, so that the pavement and even the kennel were perfectly clean.

I then judged that, if that feeble woman could sweep such a street in three hours, a strong, active man might have done it in half the time. And here let me remark the convenience of having but one gutter in such a narrow street, running down its middle, instead of two, one on each side, near the

footway; for where all the rain that falls on a street runs from the sides and meets in the middle, it forms there a current strong enough to wash away all the mud it meets with; but when divided into two channels, it is often too weak to cleanse either, and only makes the mud it finds more fluid, so that the wheels of carriages and feet of horses throw and dash it upon the foot-pavement, which is thereby rendered foul and slippery, and sometimes splash it upon those who are walking. My proposal, communicated to the good doctor, was as follows:

"For the more effectual cleaning and keeping clean the streets of London and Westminster, it is proposed that the several watchmen be contracted with to have the dust swept up in dry seasons, and the mud raked up at other times, each in the several streets and lanes of his round; that they be furnished with brooms and other proper instruments for these purposes, to be kept at their respective stands, ready to furnish the poor people they may employ in the service.

"That in the dry summer months the dust be all swept up into heaps at proper distances, before the shops and windows of houses are usually opened, when the scavengers, with close-covered carts, shall also carry it all away.

"That the mud, when raked up, be not left in heaps to be spread abroad again by the wheels of carriages and trampling of horses, but that the scavengers be provided with bodies of carts, not placed high upon wheels, but low upon sliders with lattice bottoms, which, being covered with straw, will retain the mud thrown into them, and permit the water to drain from it, whereby it will become much lighter,

"A POOR WOMAN SWEEPING MY PAVEMENT WITH A BIRCH BROOM"

water making the greatest part of its weight; these bodies of carts to be placed at convenient distances, and the mud brought to them in wheelbarrows; they remaining where placed till the mud is drained, and then horses brought to draw them away."

I have since had doubts of the practicability of the latter part of this proposal, on account of the narrowness of some streets, and the difficulty of placing the draining-sleds so as not to encumber too much the passage; but I am still of opinion that the former, requiring the dust to be swept up and carried away before the shops are open, is very practicable in the summer, when the days are long; for, in walking through the Strand and Fleet Street one morning at seven o'clock, I observed there was not one shop open, though it had been daylight and the sun up above three hours; the inhabitants of London choosing voluntarily to live much by candle-light, and sleep by sunshine, and yet often complain, a little absurdly, of the duty on candles, and the high price of tallow.

Some may think these trifling matters not worth minding or relating; but when they consider that though dust blown into the eyes of a single person, or into a single shop on a windy day, is but of small importance, yet the great number of the instances in a populous city, and its frequent repetitions give it weight and consequence, perhaps they will not censure very severely those who bestow some attention to affairs of this seemingly low nature. Human felicity is produced not so much by great pieces of good fortune that seldom happen, as by little advantages that occur every day. Thus, if you teach a poor young man to shave himself, and keep his razor in order, you may contribute more to the happiness of

his life than in giving him a thousand guineas. The money may be soon spent, the regret only remaining of having foolishly consumed it; but in the other case, he escapes the frequent vexation of waiting for barbers, and of their sometimes dirty fingers, offensive breaths, and dull razors; he shaves when most convenient to him, and enjoys daily the pleasure of its being done with a good instrument. With these sentiments I have hazarded the few preceding pages, hoping they may afford hints which some time or other may be useful to a city I love, having lived many years in it very happily, and perhaps to some of our towns in America.

Having been for some time employed by the postmaster-general of America as his comptroller in regulating several offices, and bringing the officers to account, I was, upon his death in 1753, appointed, jointly with Mr. William Hunter, to succeed him, by a commission from the postmaster-general in England. The American office never had hitherto paid anything to that of Britain. We were to have six hundred pounds a year between us, if we could make that sum out of the profits of the office. To do this a variety of improvements were necessary; some of these were inevitably at first expensive, so that in the first four years the office became above nine hundred pounds in debt to us. But it soon after began to repay us; and before I was displaced by a freak of the ministers, of which I shall speak hereafter, we had brought it to yield *three times* as much clear revenue to the crown as the post-office of Ireland. Since that imprudent transaction, they have received from it — not one farthing!

The business of the post-office occasioned my taking

a journey this year to New England, where the College of Cambridge, of their own motion, presented me with the degree of Master of Arts. Yale College, in Connecticut, had before made me a similar compliment. Thus, without studying in any college, I came to partake of their honors. They were conferred in consideration of my improvements and discoveries in the electric branch of natural philosophy.

In 1754, war with France being again apprehended, a congress of commissioners from the different colonies was, by an order of the Lords of Trade, to be assembled at Albany, there to confer with the chiefs of the Six Nations concerning the means of defending both their country and ours. Governor Hamilton, having received this order, acquainted the House with it, requesting they would furnish proper presents for the Indians, to be given on this occasion; and naming the speaker (Mr. Norris) and myself to join Mr. Thomas Penn and Mr. Secretary Peters as commissioners to act for Pennsylvania. The House approved the nomination, and provided the goods for the present, though they did not much like treating out of the provinces; and we met the other commissioners at Albany about the middle of June.

In our way thither, I projected and drew a plan for the union of all the colonies under one government, so far as might be necessary for defence and other important general purposes. As we passed through New York, I had there shown my project to Mr. James Alexander and Mr. Kennedy, two gentlemen of great knowledge in public affairs, and, being fortified by their approbation, I ventured to lay it before the Congress. It then appeared that several of the commissioners had formed plans of the same

kind. A previous question was first taken, whether a union should be established, which passed in the affirmative unanimously. A committee was then appointed, one member from each colony, to consider the several plans, and report. Mine happened to be preferred, and, with a few amendments, was accordingly reported.

By this plan the general government was to be administered by a president-general, appointed and supported by the crown, and a grand council was to be chosen by the representatives of the people of the several colonies, met in their respective assemblies. The debates upon it in Congress went on daily, hand in hand with the Indian business. Many objections and difficulties were started, but at length they were all overcome, and the plan was unanimously agreed to, and copies ordered to be transmitted to the Board of Trade and to the assemblies of the several provinces. Its fate was singular: the assemblies did not adopt it, as they all thought there was too much *prerogative* in it, and in England it was judged to have too much of the *democratic*. The Board of Trade therefore did not approve of it, nor recommend it for the approbation of his majesty; but another scheme was formed, supposed to answer the same purpose better, whereby the governors of the provinces, with some members of their respective councils, were to meet and order the raising of troops, building of forts, etc., and to draw on the treasury of Great Britain for the expense, which was afterwards to be refunded by an act of Parliament laying a tax on America. My plan, with my reasons in support of it, is to be found among my political papers that are printed.

Being the winter following in Boston, I had much

conversation with Governor Shirley upon both the plans. Part of what passed between us on the occasion may also be seen among those papers. The different and contrary reasons of dislike to my plan makes me suspect that it was really the true medium; and I am still of opinion it would have been happy for both sides the water if it had been adopted. The colonies, so united, would have been sufficiently strong to have defended themselves; there would then have been no need of troops from England; of course, the subsequent pretence for taxing America, and the bloody contest it occasioned, would have been avoided. But such mistakes are not new: history is full of the errors of states and princes.

> "Look round the habitable world, how few
> Know their own good, or, knowing it, pursue!"

Those who govern, having much business on their hands, do not generally like to take the trouble of considering and carrying into execution new projects. The best public measures are therefore seldom *adopted from previous wisdom, but forced by the occasion.*

The Governor of Pennsylvania, in sending it down to the Assembly, expressed his approbation of the plan, "as appearing to him to be drawn up with great clearness and strength of judgment, and therefore recommended it as well worthy of their closest and most serious attention." The House, however, by the management of a certain member, took it up when I happened to be absent, which I thought not very fair, and reprobated it without paying any attention to it at all, to my no small mortification.

In my journey to Boston this year, I met at New York with our new governor, Mr. Morris, just arrived

there from England, with whom I had been before intimately acquainted. He brought a commission to supersede Mr. Hamilton, who, tired with the disputes his proprietary instructions subjected him to, had resigned. Mr. Morris asked me if I thought he must expect as uncomfortable an administration. I said "No; you may, on the contrary, have a very comfortable one, if you will only take care not to enter into any dispute with the Assembly." "My dear friend," says he, pleasantly, "how can you advise my avoiding disputes? You know I love disputing; it is one of my greatest pleasures; however, to show the regard I have for your counsel, I promise you I will, if possible, avoid them." He had some reason for loving to dispute, being eloquent, an acute sophister, and therefore generally successful in argumentative conversation. He had been brought up to it from a boy, his father, as I have heard, accustoming his children to dispute with one another for his diversion, while sitting at table after dinner; but I think the practice was not wise; for, in the course of my observation, these disputing, contradicting, and confuting people are generally unfortunate in their affairs. They get victory sometimes, but they never get good will, which would be of more use to them. We parted, he going to Philadelphia, and I to Boston.

In returning, I met at New York with the votes of the Assembly, by which it appeared that, notwithstanding his promise to me, he and the House were already in high contention; and it was a continual battle between them as long as he retained the government. I had my share of it; for, as soon as I got back to my seat in the Assembly, I was put on every committee for answering his speeches and messages,

nd by the committees always desired to make the lrafts. Our answers, as well as his messages, were ften tart, and sometimes indecently abusive; and as e knew I wrote for the Assembly, one might have magined that, when we met, we could hardly avoid utting throats; but he was so good-natured a man hat no personal difference between him and me was ccasioned by the contest, and we often dined to-ether.

One afternoon, in the height of this public quarrel, ve met in the street. "Franklin," says he, "you nust go home with me and spend the evening; I am o have some company that you will like;" and taking ne by the arm, he led me to his house. In gay con-versation over our wine, after supper, he told us, okingly, that he much admired the idea of Sancho Panza, who, when it was proposed to give him a government, requested it might be a government of *blacks*, as then, if he could not agree with his people, ie might sell them. One of his friends, who sat next o me, says, "Franklin, why do you continue to side vith these damned Quakers? Had you not better ell them? The proprietor would give a good price." 'The governor," says I, "has not yet *blacked* them enough." He, indeed, had labored hard to blacken he Assembly in all his messages, but they wiped off is coloring as fast as he laid it on, and placed it, in eturn, thick upon his own face; so that, finding he vas likely to be negrofied himself, he, as well as Mr. Hamilton, grew tired of the contest, and quitted the government.

These public quarrels were all at bottom owing o the proprietaries, our hereditary governors, who, vhen any expense was to be incurred for the defence

of their province, with incredible meanness instructed their deputies to pass no act for levying the necessary taxes, unless their vast estates were in the same act expressly excused; and they had even taken bonds of these deputies to observe such instructions. The Assemblies for three years held out against this injustice, though constrained to bend at last. At length Captain Denny, who was Governor Morris's successor, ventured to disobey those instructions: how that was brought about I shall show hereafter.

But I am got forward too fast with my story: there are still some transactions to be mentioned that happened during the administration of Governor Morris.

XI

IN THE SERVICE OF THE KING

War being in a manner commenced with France, the government of Massachusetts Bay projected an attack upon Crown Point, and sent Mr. Quincy to Pennsylvania, and Mr. Pownall, afterward Governor Pownall, to New York, to solicit assistance. As I was in the Assembly, knew its temper, and was Mr. Quincy's countryman, he applied to me for my influence and assistance. I dictated his address to them, which was well received. They voted an aid of ten thousand pounds, to be laid out in provisions. But the governor refusing his assent to their bill (which included this with other sums granted for the use of the crown), unless a clause were inserted exempting the proprietary estate from bearing any part of the tax that would be necessary, the Assembly, though very desirous of making their grant to New England effectual, were at a loss how to accomplish it. Mr. Quincy labored hard with the governor to obtain his assent, but he was obstinate.

I then suggested a method of doing the business without a governor, by orders on the trustees of the loan Office, which, by law, the Assembly had the right of drawing. There was, indeed, little or no money at that time in the office, and therefore I proposed that the orders should be payable in a year, and to bear an interest of five per cent. With these orders I supposed the provisions might easily be purchased. The Assembly, with very little hesitation, adopted

the proposal. The orders were immediately printed, and I was one of the committee directed to sign and dispose of them. The fund for paying them was the interest of all the paper currency then extant in the province upon loan, together with the revenue arising from the excise, which being known to be more than sufficient, they obtained instant credit, and were not only received in payment for the provisions, but many moneyed people, who had cash lying by them, vested it in those orders, which they found advantageous, as they bore interest while upon hand, and might on any occasion be used as money, so that they were eagerly all bought up, and in a few weeks none of them were to be seen. Thus this important affair was by my means completed. Mr. Quincy returned thanks to the Assembly in a handsome memorial, went home highly pleased with the success of his embassy, and ever after bore for me the most cordial and affectionate friendship.

The British government, not choosing to permit the union of the colonies as proposed at Albany, and to trust that union with their defence, lest they should thereby grow too military and feel their own strength, suspicions and jealousies at this time being entertained of them, sent over General Braddock with two regiments of regular English troops for that purpose. He landed at Alexandria, in Virginia, and thence marched to Fredericktown, in Maryland where he halted for carriages. Our Assembly apprehending, from some information, that he had conceived violent prejudices against them, as averse to the service, wished me to wait upon him, not as from them, but as postmaster-general, under the guise of proposing to settle with him the mode o

onducting with most celerity and certainty the de-
patches between him and the governors of the sev-
al provinces, with whom he must necessarily have
ontinual correspondence, and of which they pro-
osed to pay the expense. My son accompanied
e on this journey.

We found the general at Fredericktown, waiting
npatiently for the return of those he had sent
hrough the back parts of Maryland and Virginia
o collect wagons. I stayed with him several days,
ined with him daily, and had full opportunity of
moving all his prejudices, by the information of
hat the Assembly had before his arrival actually
one, and were still willing to do, to facilitate his
perations. When I was about to depart, the re-
urns of wagons to be obtained were brought in,
y which it appeared that they amounted only to
wenty-five, and not all of those were in serviceable
ondition. The general and all the officers were
urprised, declared the expedition was then at an
nd, being impossible, and exclaimed against the
inisters for ignorantly landing them in a country
estitute of the means of conveying their stores,
aggage, etc., not less than one hundred and fifty
agons being necessary.

I happened to say I thought it was a pity they had
ot been landed rather in Pennsylvania, as in that
ountry almost every farmer had his wagon. The
eneral eagerly laid hold of my words, and said,
Then you, sir, who are a man of interest there, can
robably procure them for us; and I beg you will un-
ertake it." I asked what terms were to be offered
he owners of the wagons; and I was desired to put
n paper the terms that appeared to me necessary.

This I did, and they were agreed to, and a commission and instructions accordingly prepared immediately. What those terms were will appear in the advertisement I published as soon as I arrived at Lancaster, which being, from the great and sudden effect it produced, a piece of some curiosity, I shall insert it at length, as follows:

"ADVERTISEMENT

"LANCASTER, *April* 26, 1755

"Whereas, one hundred and fifty wagons, with four horses to each wagon, and fifteen hundred saddle or pack horses, are wanted for the service of his majesty's forces now about to rendezvous at Will's Creek, and his excellency General Braddock having been pleased to empower me to contract for the hire of the same, I hereby give notice that I shall attend for that purpose at Lancaster from this day to next Wednesday evening, and at York from next Thursday morning till Friday evening, where I shall be ready to agree for wagons and teams, or single horses, on the following terms, viz.: 1. That there shall be paid for each wagon, with four good horses and a driver, fifteen shillings per diem; and for each able horse with a pack-saddle or other saddle and furniture, two shillings per diem; and for each able horse without a saddle, eighteen pence per diem. 2. That the pay commence from the time of their joining the forces at Will's Creek, which must be on or before the 20th of May ensuing, and that a reasonable allowance be paid over and above for the time necessary for their travelling to Will's Creek and home again after their discharge. 3. Each wagon and team, and every

addle or pack horse, is to be valued by indifferent ersons chosen between me and the owner; and in ase of the loss of any wagon, team, or other horse in he service, the price according to such valuation is to e allowed and paid. 4. Seven days' pay is to be advanced and paid in hand by me to the owner of each agon and team or horse, at the time of contracting, required, and the remainder to be paid by General Braddock, or by the paymaster of the army, at the ime of their discharge, or from time to time, as it hall be demanded. 5. No drivers of wagons, or ersons taking care of the hired horses, are on any ccount to be called upon to do the duty of soldiers, r be otherwise employed than in conducting or aking care of their carriages or horses. 6. All oats, ndian corn, or other forage that wagons or horses ring to the camp, more than is necessary for the ubsistence of the horses, is to be taken for the use f the army, and a reasonable price paid for the ame.

"*Note.* — My son, William Franklin, is empowered o enter into like contracts with any person in Cumberland county.

B. FRANKLIN."

"*To the Inhabitants of the Counties of Lancaster, York, and Cumberland.*

Friends and Countrymen:

"Being occasionally at the camp at Frederick a ew days since, I found the general and officers extremely exasperated on account of their not being upplied with horses and carriages, which had been xpected from this province, as most able to furnish hem; but, through the dissensions between our

governor and Assembly, money had not been provided, nor any steps taken for that purpose.

"It was proposed to send an armed force immediately into these counties, to seize as many of the best carriages and horses as should be wanted, and compel as many persons into the service as would be necessary to drive and take care of them.

"I apprehended that the progress of British soldiers through these counties on such an occasion, especially considering the temper they are in, and their resentment against us, would be attended with many and great inconveniences to the inhabitants, and therefore more willingly took the trouble of trying first what might be done by fair and equitable means. The people of these back counties have lately complained to the Assembly that a sufficient currency was wanting; you have an opportunity of receiving and dividing among you a very considerable sum; for, if the service of this expedition should continue, as it is more than probable it will, for one hundred and twenty days, the hire of these wagons and horses will amount to upward of thirty thousand pounds, which will be paid you in silver and gold of the king's money.

"The service will be light and easy, for the army will scarce march above twelve miles per day, and the wagons and baggage-horses, as they carry those things that are absolutely necessary to the welfare of the army, must march with the army, and no faster, and are, for the army's sake, always placed where they can be most secure, whether in a march or in a camp.

"If you are really, as I believe you are, good and loyal subjects to his majesty, you may now do a most

cceptable service, and make it easy to yourselves; or three or four of such as can not separately spare rom the business of their plantations a wagon and our horses and a driver, may do it together, one urnishing the wagon, another one or two horses, and nother the driver, and divide the pay proportionably etween you; but if you do not this service to your ing and country voluntarily, when such good pay nd reasonable terms are offered to you, your loyalty vill be strongly suspected. The king's business must e done; so many brave troops, come so far for your lefence, must not stand idle through your backward- ness to do what may be reasonably expected from vou; wagons and horses must be had; violent meas- ures will probably be used, and you will be left to seek for a recompense where you can find it, and your case, perhaps, be little pitied or regarded.

"I have no particular interest in this affair, as, ex- cept the satisfaction of endeavoring to do good, I shall have only my labor for my pains. If this method of obtaining the wagons and horses is not likely to succeed, I am obliged to send word to the general in fourteen days; and I suppose Sir John St. Clair, the hussar, with a body of soldiers, will immediately enter the province for the purpose, which I shall be sorry to hear, because I am very sincerely and truly your friend and well-wisher,

"B. Franklin."

I received of the general about eight hundred pounds, to be disbursed in advance-money to the wagon owners, etc.; but that sum being insufficient, I advanced upward of two hundred pounds more, and in two weeks the one hundred and fifty wagons, with

two hundred and fifty-nine carrying horses, were on their march for the camp. The advertisement promised payment according to the valuation, in case any wagon or horse should be lost. The owners, however, alleging they did not know General Braddock, or what dependence might be had on his promise, insisted on my bond for the performance, which I accordingly gave them.

While I was at the camp, supping one evening with the officers of Colonel Dunbar's regiment, he represented to me his concern for the subalterns, who, he said, were generally not in affluence, and could ill afford, in this dear country, to lay in the stores that might be necessary in so long a march, through a wilderness, where nothing was to be purchased. I commiserated their case, and resolved to endeavor procuring them some relief. I said nothing, however, to him of my intention, but wrote the next morning to the committee of the Assembly, who had the disposition of some public money, warmly recommending the case of these officers to their consideration, and proposing that a present should be sent them of necessaries and refreshments. My son, who had some experience of a camp life, and of its wants, drew up a list for me, which I enclosed in my letter. The committee approved, and used such diligence that, conducted by my son, the stores arrived at the camp as soon as the wagons. They consisted of twenty parcels, each containing —

6 lbs. loaf sugar.
6 lbs. good Muscovado do.
1 lb. good green tea.
1 lb. good bohea do.
6 lbs. good ground coffee.
1 Gloucester cheese.
1 keg containing 20 lbs. good butter.
2 doz. old Madeira wine.
2 gallons Jamaica spirits.

lbs. chocolate.
-2 cwt. best white biscuit.
-2 lb. pepper.
quart best white wine vinegar.
1 bottle flour of mustard.
2 well-cured hams.
1-2 dozen dried tongues.
6 lbs. rice.
6 lbs. raisins.

These twenty parcels, well packed, were placed on s many horses, each parcel, with the horse, being ntended as a present for one officer. They were very hankfully received, and the kindness acknowledged y letters to me from the colonels of both regiments, n the most grateful terms. The general, too, was ighly satisfied with my conduct in procuring him he wagons, etc., and readily paid my account of dis-ursements, thanking me repeatedly, and requesting ny farther assistance in sending provisions after him. undertook this also, and was busily employed in it ill we heard of his defeat, advancing for the service f my own money upwards of one thousand pounds terling, of which I sent him an account. It came to is hands, luckily for me, a few days before the battle, nd he returned me immediately an order on the aymaster for the round sum of one thousand pounds, eaving the remainder to the next account. I con-ider this payment as good luck, having never been ble to obtain that remainder, of which more here-fter.

This general was, I think, a brave man, and might robably have made a figure as a good officer in some European war. But he had too much self-confidence, oo high an opinion of the validity of regular troops, nd too mean a one of both Americans and Indians. George Croghan, our Indian interpreter, joined him n his march with one hundred of those people, who ight have been of great use to his army as guides,

scouts, etc., if he had treated them kindly; but he slighted and neglected them, and they gradually left him.

In conversation with him one day, he was giving me some account of his intended progress. "After taking Fort Duquesne," says he, "I am to proceed to Niagara; and, having taken that, to Frontenac, if the season will allow time; and I suppose it will, for Duquesne can hardly detain me above three or four days; and then I see nothing that can obstruct my march to Niagara." Having before revolved in my mind the long line his army must make in their march by a very narrow road, to be cut for them through the woods and bushes, and also what I had read of a former defeat of fifteen hundred French, who invaded the Iroquois country, I had conceived some doubts and some fears for the event of the campaign. But I ventured only to say, "To be sure, sir, if you arrive well before Duquesne, with these fine troops, so well provided with artillery, that place not yet completely fortified, and as we hear with no very strong garrison, can probably make but a short resistance. The only danger I apprehend of obstruction to your march is from ambuscades of Indians, who, by constant practice, are dexterous in laying and executing them; and the slender line, near four miles long, which your army must make, may expose it to be attacked by surprise in its flanks, and to be cut like a thread into several pieces, which, from their distance, can not come up in time to support each other."

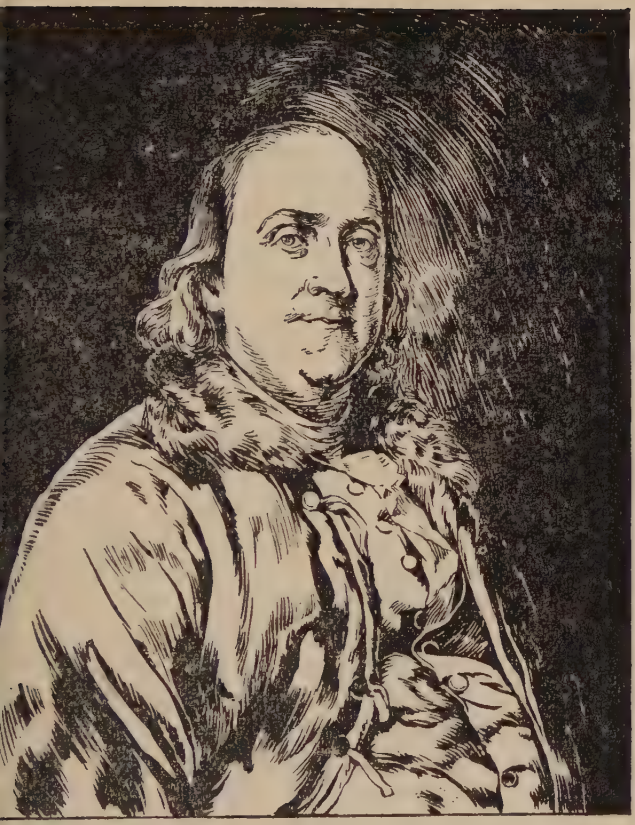
He smiled at my ignorance, and replied, "These savages may, indeed, be a formidable enemy to your raw American militia, but upon the king's regular and

disciplined troops, sir, it is impossible they should make any impression." I was conscious of an impropriety in my disputing with a military man in matters of his profession, and said no more. The enemy, however, did not take the advantage of his army which I apprehended its long line of march exposed it to, but let it advance without interruption till within nine miles of the place; and then, when more in a body (for it had just passed a river, where the front had halted till all were come over), and in a more open part of the woods than any it had passed, attacked its advanced guard by a heavy fire from behind trees and bushes, which was the first intelligence the general had of an enemy's being near him. This guard being disordered, the general hurried the troops up to their assistance, which was done in great confusion, through wagons, baggage, and cattle; and presently the fire came upon their flank: the officers, being on horseback, were more easily distinguished, picked out as marks, and fell very fast; and the soldiers were crowded together in a huddle, having or hearing no orders, and standing to be shot at till two thirds of them were killed; and then, being seized with a panic, the whole fled with precipitation.

The wagoners took each a horse out of his team and scampered; their example was immediately followed by others; so that all the wagons, provisions, artillery, and stores were left to the enemy. The general, being wounded, was brought off with difficulty: his secretary, Mr. Shirley, was killed by his side; and out of eighty-six officers, sixty-three were killed or wounded, and seven hundred and fourteen men killed out of eleven hundred. These eleven hundred had been picked men from the whole army; the rest had

been left behind with Colonel Dunbar, who was to follow with the heavier part of the stores, provisions, and baggage. The flyers, not being pursued, arrived at Dunbar's camp, and the panic they brought with them instantly seized him and all his people; and, though he had now above one thousand men, and the enemy who had beaten Braddock did not at most exceed four hundred Indians and French together, instead of proceeding, and endeavoring to recover some of the lost honor, he ordered all the stores, ammunition, etc., to be destroyed, that he might have more horses to assist his flight towards the settlements, and less lumber to remove. He was there met with requests from the governors of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, that he would post his troops on the frontiers, so as to afford some protection to the inhabitants; but he continued his hasty march through all the country, not thinking himself safe till he arrived at Philadelphia, where the inhabitants could protect him. This whole transaction gave us Americans the first suspicion that our exalted ideas of the prowess of British regulars had not been well founded.

In their first march, too, from their landing till they got beyond the settlements, they had plundered and stripped the inhabitants, totally ruining some poor families, besides insulting, abusing, and confining the people if they remonstrated. This was enough to put us out of conceit of such defenders, if we had really wanted any. How different was the conduct of our French friends in 1781, who, during a march through the most inhabited part of our country from Rhode Island to Virginia, near seven hundred miles, occasioned not the smallest complaint for the loss of a pig, a chicken, or even an apple.



Benj.a Franklin

AFTER A PAINTING BY DUPLESSIS IN THE BOSTON MUSEUM OF FINE ARTS

Captain Orme, who was one of the general's aides-de-mp, and, being grievously wounded, was brought f with him, and continued with him to his death, hich happened in a few days, told me that he was tally silent all day, and at night only said, "*Who ould have thought it?*" That he was silent again the llowing day, saying only at last, "*We shall better now how to deal with them another time*"; and died in few minutes after.

The secretary's papers, with all the general's or-rs, instructions, and correspondence, falling into e enemy's hands, they selected and translated into rench a number of the articles, which they printed, prove the hostile intentions of the British court fore the declaration of war. Among these I saw me letters of the general to the ministry, speaking ghly of the great service I had rendered the army, d recommending me to their notice. David Hume, o, who was some years after secretary to Lord Hert-rd, when minister in France, and afterward to Gen-al Conway, when secretary of state, told me he had en among the papers in that office, letters from raddock highly recommending me. But the expedi-on having been unfortunate, my service, it seems, as not thought of much value, for those recommen-tions were never of any use to me.

As to rewards from himself, I asked only one, which as that he would give orders to his officers not to list any more of our bought servants, and that he ould discharge such as had been already enlisted. his he readily granted, and several were accordingly turned to their masters, on my application. Dun-r, when the command devolved on him, was not so nerous. He being at Philadelphia, on his retreat

or rather flight, I applied to him for the discharge of the servants of three poor farmers of Lancaster county that he had enlisted, reminding him of the late general's orders on that head. He promised me that, if the masters would come to him at Trenton, where he should be in a few days on his march to New York, he would there deliver their men to them. They accordingly were at the expense and trouble of going to Trenton, and there he refused to perform his promise, to their great loss and disappointment.

As soon as the loss of the wagons and horses was generally known, all the owners came upon me for the valuation which I had given bond to pay. Their demands gave me a great deal of trouble, my acquainting them that the money was ready in the paymaster's hands, but that orders for paying it must first be obtained from General Shirley, and my assuring them that I had applied to that general by letter, but he being at a distance, an answer could not soon be received, and they must have patience; all this was not sufficient to satisfy, and some began to sue me. General Shirley at length relieved me from this terrible situation by appointing commissioners to examine the claims, and ordering payment. They amounted to near twenty thousand pound, which to pay would have ruined me.

Before we had the news of this defeat, the two Doctors Bond came to me with a subscription paper for raising money to defray the expense of a grand firework, which it was intended to exhibit at a rejoicing on receipt of the news of our taking Fort Duquesne. I looked grave, and said it would, I thought, be time enough to prepare for the rejoicing when we knew we should have occasion to rejoice. They seemed sur-

ised that I did not immediately comply with their oposal. "Why . . . !" says one of them, "you rely don't suppose that the fort will not be taken?" I don't know that it will not be taken, but I know at the events of war are subject to great uncer-inty." I gave them the reasons of my doubting; e subscription was dropped, and the projectors ereby missed the mortification they would have un-rgone if the firework had been prepared. Dr. Bond, some other occasion afterward, said that he did t like Franklin's forebodings.

XII

COMMON-SENSE IN WAR MATTERS

Governor Morris, who had continually worried the Assembly with message after message before the defeat of Braddock, to beat them into the making of acts to raise money for the defence of the province without taxing, among others, the proprietary estates, and had rejected all their bills for not having such an exempting clause, now redoubled his attacks with more hope of success, the danger and necessity being greater. The Assembly, however, continued firm, believing they had justice on their side, and that it would be giving up an essential right if they suffered the governor to amend their money-bills. In one of the last, indeed, which was for granting fifty thousand pounds, his proposed amendment was only of a single word. The bill expressed "that all estates, real and personal, were to be taxed, those of the proprietaries *not* excepted." His amendment was, for *not* read *only:* a small but very material alteration. However, when the news of this disaster reached England, our friends there, whom we had taken care to furnish with all the Assembly's answers to the governor's messages, raised a clamor against the proprietaries for their meanness and injustice in giving their governor such instructions; some going so far as to say that by obstructing the defence of their province they forfeited their right to it. They were intimidated by this, and sent orders to their

ceiver-general to add five thousand pounds of their oney to whatever sum might be given by the Assembly for such purpose.

This, being notified to the House, was accepted lieu of their share of a general tax, and a new bill as formed, with an exempting clause, which passed cordingly. By this act I was appointed one of the mmissioners for disposing of the money, sixty thound pounds. I had been active in modelling the bill nd procuring its passage, and had, at the same time, awn a bill for establishing and disciplining a volunry militia, which I carried through the House without much difficulty, as care was taken in it to leave the uakers at their liberty. To promote the association necessary to form the militia, I wrote a dialogue, ating and answering all the objections I could think to such a militia, which was printed, and had, as I nought, great effect.

While the several companies in the city and county were forming, and learning their exercise, the governor prevailed with me to take charge of our Northestern frontier, which was infested by the enemy, nd provide for the defence of the inhabitants by ising troops and building a line of forts. I undertook this military business, though I did not conceive yself well qualified for it. He gave me a commission with full powers, and a parcel of blank commisons for officers, to be given to whom I thought fit. had but little difficulty in raising men, having soon ve hundred and sixty under my command. My on, who had in the preceding war been an officer in he army raised against Canada, was my aide-deamp, and of great use to me. The Indians had urned Gnadenhut, a village settled by the Mora-

vians, and massacred the inhabitants; but the place was thought a good situation for one of the forts.

In order to march thither, I assembled the companies at Bethlehem, the chief establishment of those people. I was surprised to find it in so good a posture of defence; the destruction of Gnadenhut had made them apprehend danger. The principal buildings were defended by a stockade; they had purchased a quantity of arms and ammunition from New York, and had even placed quantities of small paving stones between the windows of their high stone houses for their women to throw down upon the heads of any Indians that should attempt to force into them. The armed brethren, too, kept watch, and relieved as methodically as any garrison town. In conversation with the bishop, Spangenberg, I mentioned this my surprise; for, knowing they had obtained an act of Parliament exempting them from military duties in the colonies, I had supposed they were conscientiously scrupulous of bearing arms. He answered me that it was not one of their established principles, but that, at the time of their obtaining that act, it was thought to be a principle with many of their people. On this occasion, however, they, to their surprise, found it adopted by but a few. It seems they were either deceived in themselves or deceived the Parliament; but common sense, aided by present danger, will sometimes be too strong for whimsical opinions.

It was the beginning of January when we set out upon this business of building forts. I sent one detachment toward the Minisink, with instructions to erect one for the security of that upper part of the country, and another to the lower part, with similar instructions; and I concluded to go myself with the

st of my force to Gnadenhut, where a fort was ought more immediately necessary. The Moravi- ns procured me five wagons for our tools, stores, ggage, etc.

Just before we left Bethlehem, eleven farmers, who ad been driven from their plantations by the Indi- ns, came to me requesting a supply of firearms, that ey might go back and fetch off their cattle. I gave em each a gun with suitable ammunition. We had ot marched many miles before it began to rain, and continued raining all day; there were no habitations n the road to shelter us, till we arrived near night at e house of a German, where, and in his barn, we were l huddled together, as wet as water could make s. It was well we were not attacked in our march, r our arms were of the most ordinary sort, and our en could not keep their gunlocks dry. The In- ians are dexterous in contrivances for that purpose, hich we had not. They met that day the eleven poor rmers above mentioned, and killed ten of them. he one who escaped informed that his and his com- anions' guns would not go off, the priming being et with the rain.

The next day being fair, we continued our march nd arrived at the desolated Gnadenhut.

There was a saw-mill near, round which were left everal piles of boards, with which we soon hutted urselves; an operation the more necessary at that in- ement season as we had no tents. Our first work as to bury more effectually the dead we found there, ho had been half interred by the country people.

The next morning our fort was planned and marked ut, the circumference measuring four hundred and fty-five feet, which would require as many palisades

to be made of trees, one with another, of a foot diameter each. Our axes, of which we had seventy, were immediately set to work to cut down trees, and, our men being dexterous in the use of them, great dispatch was made. Seeing the trees fall so fast, I had the curiosity to look at my watch when two men began to cut at a pine; in six minutes they had it upon the ground, and I found it of fourteen inches diameter. Each pine made three palisades of eighteen feet long, pointed at one end. While these were preparing, our other men dug a trench all round, of three feet deep, in which the palisades were to be planted; and our wagons, the bodies being taken off, and the fore and hind wheels separated by taking out the pin which united the two parts of the perch, we had ten carriages, with two horses each, to bring the palisades from the woods to the spot. When they were set up, our carpenters built a stage of boards all round within, about six feet high, for the men to stand on when to fire through the loopholes. We had one swivel gun, which we mounted on one of the angles, and fired it as soon as fixed, to let the Indians know, if any were within hearing, that we had such pieces; and thus our fort, if such a magnificent name may be given to so miserable a stockade, was finished in a week, though it rained so hard every other day that the men could not work.

This gave me occasion to observe, that when men are employed they are best contented; for on the days they worked they were good-natured and cheerful, and, with the consciousness of having done a good day's work, they spent the evening jollily; but on our idle days they were mutinous and quarrelsome, finding fault with their pork, the bread, etc., and in con-

nual ill-humor, which put me in mind of a sea-
aptain, whose rule it was to keep his men constantly
work; and when his mate once told him that they
ad done everything, and there was nothing further
o employ them about, "*Oh*," says he, "*make them*
our the anchor."

This kind of fort, however contemptible, is a suffi-
ent defence against Indians, who have no cannon.
inding ourselves now posted securely, and having a
iace to retreat to on occasion, we ventured out in
arties to scour the adjacent country. We met with
o Indians, but we found the places on the neighbor-
ig hills where they had lain to watch our proceed-
igs. There was an art in their contrivance of those
laces that seems worth mention. It being winter, a
re was necessary for them; but a common fire on the
urface of the ground would by its light have discov-
red their position at a distance. They had therefore
ug holes in the ground about three feet diameter and
omewhat deeper; we saw where they had with their
atchets cut off the charcoal from the sides of burnt
ogs lying in the woods. With these coals they had
nade small fires in the bottom of the holes, and we
bserved among the weeds and grass the prints of
heir bodies, made by their lying all round, with their
egs hanging down in the holes to keep their feet
varm, which with them is an essential point. This
ind of fire, so managed, could not discover them,
ither by its light, flame, sparks, or even smoke: it
ppeared that their number was not great, and it
eems they saw we were too many to be attacked by
hem with prospect of advantage.

We had for our chaplain a zealous Presbyterian
inister, Mr. Beatty, who complained to me that the

men did not generally attend his prayers and exhortations. When they enlisted, they were promised, besides pay and provisions, a gill of rum a day, which was punctually served out to them, half in the morning and the other half in the evening; and I observed they were as punctual in attending to receive it; upon which I said to Mr. Beatty, "It is, perhaps, below the dignity of your profession to act as steward of the rum, but if you were to deal it out and only just after prayers, you would have them all about you." He liked the thought, undertook the office, and, with the help of a few hands to measure out the liquor, executed it to satisfaction, and never were prayers more generally and more punctually attended; so that I thought this method preferable to the punishment inflicted by some military laws for non-attendance on divine service.

I had hardly finished this business, and got my fort well stored with provisions, when I received a letter from the governor, acquainting me that he had called the Assembly, and wished my attendance there, if the posture of affairs on the frontiers was such that my remaining there was no longer necessary. My friends, too, of the Assembly, pressing me by their letters to be, if possible, at the meeting, and my three intended forts being now completed, and the inhabitants contented to remain on their farms under that protection, I resolved to return; the more willingly, as a New England officer, Colonel Clapham, experienced in Indian war, being on a visit to our establishment, consented to accept the command. I gave him a commission, and, parading the garrison, had it read before them, and introduced him to them as an officer who, from his skill in military affairs, was much more

fit to command them than myself; and, giving them a little exhortation, took my leave. I was escorted as far as Bethlehem, where I rested a few days to recover from the fatigue I had undergone. The first night, being in a good bed, I could hardly sleep, it was so different from my hard lodging on the floor of our hut at Gnaden, wrapped only in a blanket or two.

While at Bethlehem, I inquired a little into the practice of the Moravians: some of them had accompanied me, and all were very kind to me. I found they worked for a common stock, eat at common tables, and slept in common dormitories, great numbers together. In the dormitories I observed loopholes, at certain distances all along just under the ceiling, which I thought judiciously placed for change of air. I was at their church, where I was entertained with good music, the organ being accompanied with violins, hautboys, flutes, clarinets, etc. I understood that their sermons were not usually preached to mixed congregations of men, women, and children, as is our common practice, but that they assembled sometimes the married men, at other times their wives, then the young men, the young women, and the little children, each division by itself. The sermon I heard was to the latter, who came in and were placed in rows on benches; the boys under the conduct of a young man, their tutor, and the girls conducted by a young woman. The discourse seemed well adapted to their capacities, and was delivered in a pleasing, familiar manner, coaxing them, as it were, to be good. They behaved very orderly, but looked pale and unhealthy, which made me suspect they were kept too much within doors, or not allowed sufficient exercise.

I inquired concerning the Moravian marriages, whether the report was true that they were by lot. I was told that lots were used only in particular cases: that generally, when a young man found himself disposed to marry, he informed the elders of his class, who consulted the elder ladies that governed the young women. As these elders of the different sexes were well acquainted with the tempers and dispositions of their respective pupils, they could best judge what matches were suitable, and their judgments were generally acquiesced in; but if, for example, it should happen that two or three young women were found to be equally proper for the young man, the lot was then recurred to. I objected, if the matches are not made by the mutual choice of parties, some of them may chance to be very unhappy. "And so they may," answered my informer, "if you let the parties choose for themselves"; which, indeed, I could not deny.

Being returned to Philadelphia, I found the association went on swimmingly, the inhabitants that were not Quakers having pretty generally come into it, formed themselves into companies, and chose their captains, lieutenants, and ensigns, according to the new law. Dr. B. visited me, and gave me an account of the pains he had taken to spread a general good liking to the law, and ascribed much to those endeavors. I had had the vanity to ascribe all to my *Dialogue;* however, not knowing but that he might be in the right, I let him enjoy his opinion, which I take to be generally the best way in such cases. The officers meeting, chose me to be colonel of the regiment which I this time accepted. I forget how many companies we had, but we paraded about twelve hundred

well-looking men, with a company of artillery, who had been furnished with six brass field-pieces, which they had become so expert in the use of as to fire twelve times in a minute. The first time I reviewed my regiment they accompanied me to my house, and would salute me with some rounds fired before my door, which shook down and broke several glasses of my electrical apparatus. And my new honor proved not much less brittle; for all our commissions were soon after broken by a repeal of the law in England.

During this short time of my colonelship, being about to set out on a journey to Virginia, the officers of my regiment took it into their heads that it would be proper for them to escort me out of town, as far as the Lower Ferry. Just as I was getting on horseback they came to my door, between thirty and forty, mounted, and all in their uniforms. I had not been previously acquainted with the project, or I should have prevented it, being naturally averse to the assuming of state on any occasion; and I was a good deal chagrined at their appearance, as I could not avoid their accompanying me. What made it worse was, that, as soon as we began to move, they drew their swords and rode with them naked all the way. Somebody wrote an account of this to the proprietor, and it gave him great offence. No such honor had been paid him when in the province, nor to any of his governors; and he said it was only proper to princes of the blood royal, which may be true for aught I know, who was, and still am, ignorant of the etiquette in such cases.

This silly affair, however, greatly increased his rancor against me, which was before not a little, on account of my conduct in the Assembly respecting

the exemption of his estate from taxation, which I had always opposed very warmly, and not without severe reflections on his meanness and injustice of contending for it. He accused me to the ministry as being the great obstacle to the king's service, preventing, by my influence in the House, the proper form of the bills for raising money, and he instanced this parade with my officers as a proof of my having an intention to take the government of the province out of his hands by force. He also applied to Sir Everard Fawkener, the postmaster-general, to deprive me of my office; but it had no other effect than to procure from Sir Everard a gentle admonition.

Notwithstanding the continual wrangle between the governor and the House, in which I, as a member, had so large a share, there still subsisted a civil intercourse between that gentleman and myself, and we never had any personal difference. I have sometimes since thought that his little or no resentment against me, for the answers it was known I drew up to his messages, might be the effect of professional habit, and that, being bred a lawyer, he might consider us both as merely advocates for contending clients in a suit, he for the proprietaries and I for the Assembly. He would, therefore, sometimes call in a friendly way to advise with me on difficult points, and sometimes, though not often, take my advice.

We acted in concert to supply Braddock's army with provisions; and when the shocking news arrived of his defeat, the governor sent in haste for me to consult with him on measures for preventing the desertion of the back counties. I forget now the advice I gave; but I think it was, that Dunbar should be written to, and prevailed with, if possible, to post his

roops on the frontiers for their protection, till, by re-nforcements from the colonies, he might be able to roceed on the expedition. And, after my return rom the frontier, he would have had me undertake he conduct of such an expedition with provincial roops, for the reduction of Fort Duquesne, Dunbar nd his men being otherwise employed; and he pro-osed to commission me as general. I had not so ood an opinion of my military abilities as he pro-essed to have, and I believe his professions must have xceeded his real sentiments; but probably he might hink that my popularity would facilitate the raising f the men, and my influence in Assembly, the grant f money to pay them, and that, perhaps, without axing the proprietary estate. Finding me not so orward to engage as he expected, the project was lropped, and he soon after left the government, being uperseded by Captain Denny.

Before I proceed in relating the part I had in public affairs under this new governor's administration, it may not be amiss here to give some account of the rise and progress of my philosophical reputation.

XIII

FRANKLIN THE PHILOSOPHER

In 1746, being at Boston, I met there with a Dr. Spence, who was lately arrived from Scotland, and showed me some electric experiments. They were imperfectly performed, as he was not very expert; but, being on a subject quite new to me, they equally surprised and pleased me. Soon after my return to Philadelphia, our library company received from Mr. P. Collinson, Fellow of the Royal Society of London, a present of a glass tube, with some account of the use of it in making such experiments. I eagerly seized the opportunity of repeating what I had seen at Boston; and, by much practice, acquired great readiness in performing those, also, which we had an account of from England, adding a number of new ones. I say much practice, for my house was continually full, for some time, with people who came to see these new wonders.

To divide a little this incumbrance among my friends, I caused a number of similar tubes to be blown at our glass-house, with which they furnished themselves, so that we had at length several performers. Among these, the principal was Mr. Kinnersley, an ingenious neighbor, who, being out of business, I encouraged to undertake showing the experiments for money, and drew up for him two lectures, in which the experiments were ranged in such order, and accompanied with such explanations in such method, as that the foregoing should assist in comprehending the

llowing. He procured an elegant apparatus for the
irpose, in which all the little machines that I had
ughly made for myself were nicely formed by instru-
ent-makers. His lectures were well attended, and
ve great satisfaction; and after some time he went
rough the colonies, exhibiting them in every capital
wn, and picked up some money. In the West India
lands, indeed, it was with difficulty the experiments
uld be made, from the general moisture of the air.
Obliged as we were to Mr. Collinson for his pre-
nt of the tube, etc., I thought it right he should be
formed of our success in using it, and wrote him
veral letters containing accounts of our experiments.
e got them read in the Royal Society, where they
ere not at first thought worth so much notice as to
e printed in their Transactions. One paper, which
wrote for Mr. Kinnersley, on the sameness of light-
ng with electricity, I sent to Dr. Mitchel, an ac-
uaintance of mine, and one of the members also of
at society, who wrote me word that it had been
ad but was laughed at by the connoisseurs. The
pers, however, being shown to Dr. Fothergill, he
ought them of too much value to be stifled, and ad-
sed the printing of them. Mr. Collinson then gave
em to *Cave* for publication in his Gentleman's Mag-
ine; but he chose to print them separately in a pam-
let, and Dr. Fothergill wrote the preface. Cave,
seems, judged rightly for his profit, for by the ad-
tions that arrived afterward, they swelled to a
arto volume, which has had five editions, and cost
m nothing for copy-money.

It was, however, some time before those papers
ere much taken notice of in England. A copy of
em happening to fall into the hands of the Count de

Buffon, a philosopher deservedly of great reputation in France, and, indeed, all over Europe, he prevailed with M. Dalibard to translate them into French, and they were printed at Paris. The publication offended the Abbé Nollet, preceptor in Natural Philosophy to the royal family, and an able experimenter, who had formed and published a theory of electricity, which then had the general vogue. He could not at first believe that such a work came from America, and said it must have been fabricated by his enemies at Paris, to decry his system. Afterwards, having been assured that there really existed such a person as Franklin at Philadelphia, which he had doubted, he wrote and published a volume of Letters, chiefly addressed to me, defending his theory, and denying the verity of my experiments, and of the positions deduced from them.

I once purposed answering the abbé, and actually began the answer; but, on consideration that my writings contained a description of experiments which any one might repeat and verify, and if not to be verified, could not be defended; or of observations offered as conjectures, and not delivered dogmatically, therefore not laying me under any obligation to defend them; and reflecting that a dispute between two persons, writing in different languages, might be lengthened greatly by mistranslations, and thence misconceptions of one another's meaning, much of one of the abbé's letters being founded on an error in the translation, I concluded to let my papers shift for themselves, believing it was better to spend what time I could spare from public business in making new experiments, than in disputing about those already made. I therefore never answered M. Nollet, and the

vent gave me no cause to repent my silence; for my riend M. le Roy, of the Royal Academy of Sciences, ook up my cause and refuted him; my book was ranslated into the Italian, German, and Latin lan- guages; and the doctrine it contained was by degrees niversally adopted by the philosophers of Europe, n preference to that of the abbé; so that he lived to ee himself the last of his sect, except Monsieur B——, of Paris, his *élève* and immediate disciple.

What gave my book the more sudden and general elebrity, was the success of one of its proposed ex- eriments, made by Messrs. Dalibard and De Lor at Marly, for drawing lightning from the clouds. This ngaged the public attention everywhere. M. de Lor, who had an apparatus for experimental philosophy, nd lectured in that branch of science, undertook to epeat what he called the *Philadelphia Experiments;* nd, after they were performed before the king and ourt, all the curious of Paris flocked to see them. I vill not swell this narrative with an account of that apital experiment, nor of the infinite pleasure I re- eived in the success of a similar one I made soon fter with a kite at Philadelphia, as both are to be ound in the histories of electricity.

Dr. Wright, an English physician, when at Paris, rote to a friend, who was of the Royal Society, an ccount of the high esteem my experiments were in mong the learned abroad, and of their wonder that ny writings had been so little noticed in England. The society, on this, resumed the consideration of the etters that had been read to them; and the celebrated Dr. Watson drew up a summary account of them, and f all I had afterwards sent to England on the sub- ect, which he accompanied with some praise of the

writer. This summary was then printed in their Transactions; and some members of the society in London, particularly the very ingenious Mr. Canton, having verified the experiment of procuring lightning from the clouds by a pointed rod, and acquainting them with the success, they soon made me more than amends for the slight with which they had before treated me. Without my having made any application for that honor, they chose me a member, and voted that I should be excused the customary payments, which would have amounted to twenty-five guineas; and ever since have given me their Transactions gratis. They also presented me with the gold medal of Sir Godfrey Copley for the year 1753, the delivery of which was accompanied by a very handsome speech of the president, Lord Macclesfield, wherein I was highly honored.

Our new governor, Captain Denny, brought over for me the before-mentioned medal from the Royal Society, which he presented to me at an entertainment given him by the city. He accompanied it with very polite expressions of his esteem for me, having, as he said, been long acquainted with my character. After dinner, when the company, as was customary at that time, were engaged in drinking, he took me aside into another room, and acquainted me that he had been advised by his friends in England to cultivate a friendship with me, as one who was capable of giving him the best advice, and of contributing most effectually to the making his administration easy; that he therefore desired of all things to have a good understanding with me, and he begged me to be assured of his readiness on all occasions to render me every service that might be in his power. He said

Courtesy of Henry Altemus Company, publishers

"AN EXPERIMENT I MADE WITH A KITE AT PHILADELPHIA"

uch to me, also, of the proprietor's good disposition wards the province, and of the advantage it might e to us all, and to me in particular, if the opposition at had been so long continued to his measures was ropped, and harmony restored between him and the eople; in effecting which, it was thought no one uld be more serviceable than myself; and I might epend on adequate acknowledgments and recom- enses, etc., etc. The drinkers, finding we did not turn immediately to the table, sent us a decanter f Madeira, which the governor made liberal use of, nd in proportion became more profuse of his solici- tions and promises.

My answers were to this purpose: that my circum- tances, thanks to God, were such as to make pro- rietary favors unnecessary to me; and that, being a nember of the Assembly, I could not possibly accept f any; that, however, I had no personal enmity to he proprietary, and that, whenever the public meas- ures he proposed should appear to be for the good of he people, no one should espouse and forward them nore zealously than myself; my past opposition hav- ng been founded on this, that the measures which ad been urged were evidently intended to serve the proprietary interest, with great prejudice to that of he people; that I was much obliged to him (the gov- rnor) for his professions of regard to me, and that he night rely on everything in my power to make his ad- ninistration as easy as possible, hoping at the same ime that he had not brought with him the same un- ortunate instruction his predecessor had been ham- pered with.

On this he did not then explain himself; but when he afterwards came to do business with the Assembly.

they appeared again, the disputes were renewed, and I was as active as ever in the opposition, being the penman, first, of the request to have a communication of the instructions, and then of the remarks upon them, which may be found in the votes of the time, and in the Historical Review I afterward published. But between us personally no enmity arose; we were often together; he was a man of letters, had seen much of the world, and was very entertaining and pleasing in conversation. He gave me the first information that my old friend Jas. Ralph was still alive; that he was esteemed one of the best political writers in England; had been employed in the dispute between Prince Frederic and the king, and had obtained a pension of three hundred a year; that his reputation was indeed small as a poet, Pope having damned his poetry in the *Dunciad;* but his prose was thought as good as any man's.

The Assembly finally finding the proprietary obstinately persisted in manacling their deputies with instructions inconsistent not only with the privileges of the people, but with the service of the crown, resolved to petition the king against them, and appointed me their agent to go over to England, to present and support the petition. The House had sent up a bill to the governor, granting a sum of sixty thousand pounds for the king's use (ten thousand pounds of which was subjected to the orders of the then general, Lord Loudoun), which the governor absolutely refused to pass in compliance with his instructions.

XIV

DEPARTURE FOR ENGLAND

HAD agreed with Captain Morris, of the packet at ew York, for my passage, and my stores were put n board, when Lord Loudoun arrived at Philadel- ia, expressly, as he told me, to endeavor an accom- odation between the governor and Assembly, that s majesty's service might not be obstructed by their ssensions. Accordingly, he desired the governor d myself to meet him, that he might hear what was be said on both sides. We met and discussed the siness. In behalf of the Assembly, I urged all the arious arguments that may be found in the public apers of that time, which were of my writing, and re printed with the minutes of the Assembly; and ne governor pleaded his instructions; the bond he ad given to observe them, and his ruin if he dis- beyed, yet seemed not unwilling to hazard himself Lord Loudoun would advise it. This his lordship id not choose to do, though I once thought I had early prevailed with him to do it; but finally he ather chose to urge the compliance of the Assembly; nd he entreated me to use my endeavors with them or that purpose, declaring that he would spare none f the king's troops for the defence of our frontiers, nd that, if we did not continue to provide for that efence ourselves, they must remain exposed to the nemy.

I acquainted the House with what had passed, and, resenting them with a set of resolutions I had drawn

up, declaring our rights, and that we did not relinquish our claim to those rights, but only suspended the exercise of them on this occasion through *force*, against which we protested, they at length agreed to drop that bill, and frame another conformable to the proprietary instructions. This of course the governor passed, and I was then at liberty to proceed on my voyage. But, in the mean time, the packet had sailed with my sea-stores, which was some loss to me, and my only recompense was his lordship's thanks for my service, all the credit of obtaining the accommodation falling to his share.

He set out for New York before me; and, as the time for dispatching the packet-boats was at his disposition, and there were two then remaining there, one of which, he said, was to sail very soon, I requested to know the precise time, that I might not miss her by any delay of mine. His answer was, "I have given out that she is to sail on Saturday next; but I may let you know *entre nous*, that if you are there by Monday morning, you will be in time, but do not delay longer." By some accidental hindrance at a ferry, it was Monday noon before I arrived, and I was much afraid she might have sailed, as the wind was fair; but I was soon made easy by the information that she was still in the harbor and would not move till the next day. One would imagine that I was now on the very point of departing for Europe. I thought so; but I was not then so well acquainted with his lordship's character, of which *indecision* was one of the strongest features. I shall give some instances. It was about the beginning of April that I came to New York, and I think it was near the end of June before we sailed. There were then two of the

packet-boats which had been long in port, but were detained for the general's letters, which were always to be ready to-morrow. Another packet arrived; she too was detained; and before we sailed, a fourth was expected. Ours was the first to be dispatched, as having been there longest. Passengers were engaged in all, and some extremely impatient to be gone, and the merchants uneasy about their letters and the orders they had given for insurance (it being war time) for fall goods; but their anxiety availed nothing; his lordship's letters were not ready; and yet whoever waited on him found him always at his desk, pen in hand, and concluded he must needs write abundantly.

Going myself one morning to pay my respects, I found in his antechamber one Innis, a messenger of Philadelphia, who had come from thence express with a packet from Governor Denny for the General. He delivered to me some letters from my friends there, which occasioned my inquiring when he was to return, and where he lodged, that I might send some letters by him. He told me he was ordered to call to-morrow at nine for the general's answer to the governor, and should set off immediately. I put my letters into his hands the same day. A fortnight after I met him again in the same place. "So, you are soon returned, Innis?" "*Returned!* no, I am not *gone* yet." "How so?" "I have called here by order every morning these two weeks past for his lordship's letter, and it is not ready yet." "Is it possible, when he is so great a writer? for I see him constantly at his escritoire." "Yes," says Innis, "but he is like St. George on the signs, *always on horseback, and never rides on.*" This observation of the messenger was, it seems, well founded; for, when in England, I

understood that Mr. Pitt gave it as one reason for removing this general, and sending Generals Amherst and Wolfe, *that the minister never heard from him, and could not know what he was doing.*

This daily expectation of sailing, and all the three packets going down to Sandy Hook, to join the fleet there, the passengers thought it best to be on board, lest by a sudden order the ships should sail, and they be left behind. There, if I remember right, we were about six weeks, consuming our sea-stores, and obliged to procure more. At length the fleet sailed, the General and all his army on board, bound to Louisburg, with intent to besiege and take that fortress; all the packet-boats in company ordered to attend the General's ship, ready to receive his dispatches when they should be ready. We were out five days before we got a letter with leave to part, and then our ship quitted the fleet and steered for England. The other two packets he still detained, carried them with him to Halifax, where he stayed some time to exercise the men in sham attacks upon sham forts, then altered his mind as to besieging Louisburg, and returned to New York, with all his troops, together with the two packets above mentioned, and all their passengers. During his absence the French and savages had taken Fort George, on the frontier of that province, and the savages had massacred many of the garrison after capitulation.

I saw afterwards in London Captain Bonnell, who commanded one of those packets. He told me that, when he had been detained a month, he acquainted his lordship that his ship had grown foul, to a degree that must necessarily hinder her fast sailing, a point of consequence for a packet-boat, and requested an al-

lowance of time to heave her down and clean her bottom. He was asked how long time that would require. He answered, three days. The general replied, "If you can do it in one day, I give you leave: otherwise not; for you must certainly sail the day after to-morrow." So he never obtained leave, though detained afterwards from day to day during full three months.

I saw also in London one of Bonnell's passengers, who was so enraged against his lordship for deceiving and detaining him so long at New York, and then carrying him to Halifax and back again, that he swore he would sue him for damages. Whether he did or not, I never heard; but, as he represented the injury to his affairs, it was very considerable.

On the whole, I wondered much how such a man came to be intrusted with so important a business as the conduct of a great army; but, having since seen more of the great world, and the means of obtaining, and motives for giving places, my wonder is diminished. General Shirley, on whom the command of the army devolved upon the death of Braddock, would, in my opinion, if continued in place, have made a much better campaign than that of Loudoun in 1757, which was frivolous, expensive, and disgraceful to our nation beyond conception; for, though Shirley was not a bred soldier, he was sensible and sagacious in himself, and attentive to good advice from others, capable of forming judicious plans, and quick and active in carrying them into execution. Loudoun, instead of defending the colonies with his great army, left them totally exposed, while he paraded idly at Halifax, by which means Fort George was lost; besides, he deranged all our mercantile operations, and distressed our trade, by a long embargo on the expor-

tation of provisions, on pretence of keeping supplies from being obtained by the enemy, but in reality for beating down their price in favor of the contractors in whose profits, it was said, perhaps from suspicion only, he had a share. And, when at length the embargo was taken off, by neglecting to send notice of it to Charleston, the Carolina fleet was detained near three months longer, whereby their bottoms were so much damaged by the worm that a great part of them foundered in their passage home.

Shirley was, I believe, sincerely glad of being relieved from so burdensome a charge as the conduct of an army must be to a man unacquainted with military business. I was at the entertainment given by the city of New York to Lord Loudoun, on his taking upon him the command. Shirley, though thereby superseded, was present also. There was a great company of officers, citizens, and strangers, and, some chairs having been borrowed in the neighborhood, there was one among them very low, which fell to the lot of Mr. Shirley. Perceiving it as I sat by him, I said, "They have given you, sir, too low a seat." "No matter," says he, "Mr. Franklin, I find *a low seat* the easiest."

While I was, as afore mentioned, detained at New York, I received all the accounts of the provisions, etc., that I had furnished to Braddock, some of which accounts could not sooner be obtained from the different persons I had employed to assist in the business. I presented them to Lord Loudoun, desiring to be paid the balance. He caused them to be regularly examined by the proper officer, who, after comparing every article with its voucher, certified them to be right; and the balance due for which his lord-

ip promised to give me an order on the paymaster. his was, however, put off from time to time; and, ough I called often for it by appointment, I did not t it. At length, just before my departure, he told e he had, on better consideration, concluded not to ix his accounts with those of his predecessors. "And u," says he, "when in England, have only to ex- bit your accounts at the treasury, and you will be id immediately."

I mentioned, but without effect, the great and unex- cted expense I had been put to by being detained long at New York, as a reason for my desiring to presently paid; and on my observing that it was t right I should be put to any further trouble or lay in obtaining the money I had advanced, as I harged no commission for my service, "O, sir," says e, "you must not think of persuading us that you re no gainer; we understand better those affairs, and now that every one concerned in supplying the army nds means, in the doing it, to fill his own pockets." assured him that was not my case, and that I had ot pocketed a farthing; but he appeared clearly not o believe me; and, indeed, I have since learnt that mmense fortunes are often made in such employ- ents. As to my balance, I am not paid it to this ay, of which more hereafter.

Our captain of the packet had boasted much, be- ore we sailed, of the swiftness of his ship; unfortu- ately, when we came to sea, she proved the dullest of inety-six sail, to his no small mortification. After any conjectures respecting the cause, when we ere near another ship almost as dull as ours, which, owever, gained upon us, the captain ordered all ands to come aft, and stand as near the ensign staff

as possible. We were, passengers included, about forty persons. While we stood there, the ship mended her pace, and soon left her neighbor far behind, which proved clearly what our captain suspected, that she was loaded too much by the head. The casks of water, it seems, had been all placed forward; these he therefore ordered to be moved further aft, on which the ship recovered her character, and proved the best sailer in the fleet.

The captain said she had once gone at the rate of thirteen knots, which is accounted thirteen miles per hour. We had on board, as a passenger, Captain Kennedy, of the Navy, who contended that it was impossible, and that no ship ever sailed so fast, and that there must have been some error in the division of the log-line, or some mistake in heaving the log. A wager ensued between the two captains, to be decided when there should be sufficient wind. Kennedy thereupon examined rigorously the log-line, and, being satisfied with that, he determined to throw the log himself. Accordingly some days after, when the wind blew very fair and fresh, and the captain of the packet, Lutwidge, said he believed she then went at the rate of thirteen knots, Kennedy made the experiment, and owned his wager lost.

The above fact I give for the sake of the following observation. It has been remarked, as an imperfection in the art of ship-building, that it can never be known, till she is tried, whether a new ship will or will not be a good sailer; for that the model of a good-sailing ship has been exactly followed in a new one, which has proved, on the contrary, remarkably dull. I apprehend that this may partly be occasioned by the different opinions of seamen respecting the modes

of lading, rigging, and sailing of a ship; each has his system; and the same vessel, laden by the judgment and orders of one captain, shall sail better or worse than when by the orders of another. Besides, it scarce ever happens that a ship is formed, fitted for the sea, and sailed by the same person. One man builds the hull, another rigs her, a third lades and sails her. No one of these has the advantage of knowing all the ideas and experience of the others, and, therefore, cannot draw just conclusions from a combination of the whole.

Even in the simple operation of sailing when at sea, I have often observed different judgments in the officers who commanded the successive watches, the wind being the same. One would have the sails trimmed sharper or flatter than another, so that they seemed to have no certain rule to govern by. Yet I think a set of experiments might be instituted, first, to determine the most proper form of the hull for swift sailing; next, the best dimensions and properest place for the masts; then the form and quantity of sails, and their position, as the wind may be; and, lastly, the disposition of the lading. This is an age of experiments, and I think a set accurately made and combined would be of great use. I am persuaded, therefore, that ere long some ingenious philosopher will undertake it, to whom I wish success.

We were several times chased in our passage, but outsailed everything, and in thirty days had soundings. We had a good observation, and the captain judged himself so near our port, Falmouth, that, if we made a good run in the night, we might be off the mouth of that harbor in the morning, and by running in the night might escape the notice of the enemy's

privateers, who often cruised near the entrance of the channel. Accordingly, all the sail was set that we could possibly make, and the wind being very fresh and fair, we went right before it, and made great way. The captain, after his observation, shaped his course, as he thought, so as to pass wide of the Scilly Isles; but it seems there is sometimes a strong indraught setting up St. George's Channel, which deceives seamen and caused the loss of Sir Cloudesley Shovel's squadron. This indraught was probably the cause of what happened to us.

We had a watchman placed in the bow, to whom they often called, "*Look well out before there*," and he as often answered, "*Ay, ay;*" but perhaps had his eyes shut, and was half asleep at the time, they sometimes answering, as is said, mechanically; for he did not see a light just before us, which had been hid by the studding-sails from the man at the helm, and from the rest of the watch, but by an accidental yaw of the ship was discovered, and occasioned a great alarm, we being very near it, the light appearing to me as big as a cart-wheel. It was midnight, and our captain fast asleep; but Captain Kennedy, jumping upon deck, and seeing the danger, ordered the ship to wear round, all sails standing; an operation dangerous to the masts, but it carried us clear, and we escaped shipwreck, for we were running right upon the rocks on which the lighthouse was erected. This deliverance impressed me strongly with the utility of lighthouses, and made me resolve to encourage the building more of them in America, if I should live to return there.

In the morning it was found by the soundings, etc., that we were near our port, but a thick fog hid the

nd from our sight. About nine o'clock the fog egan to rise, and seemed to be lifted up from the ater like the curtain at a play-house, discovering nderneath, the town of Falmouth, the vessels in its arbor, and the fields that surrounded it. This was most pleasing spectacle to those who had been so ng without any other prospects than the uniform iew of a vacant ocean, and it gave us the more pleas- re as we were now free from the anxieties which the tate of war occasioned.

I set out immediately, with my son, for London, nd we only stopped a little by the way to view Stone- enge on Salisbury Plain, and Lord Pembroke's house nd gardens, with his very curious antiquities at Wil- on. We arrived in London the 27th of July, 1757.

XV

THE AFFAIR WITH THE PROPRIETARIES

As soon as I was settled in a lodging Mr. Charles had provided for me, I went to visit Dr. Fothergill, to whom I was strongly recommended, and whose counsel respecting my proceedings I was advised to obtain. He was against an immediate complaint to government, and thought the proprietaries should first be personally applied to, who might possibly be induced by the interposition and persuasion of some private friends, to accommodate matters amicably. I then waited on my old friend and correspondent, Mr. Peter Collinson, who told me that John Hanbury, the great Virginia merchant, had requested to be informed when I should arrive, that he might carry me to Lord Granville's, who was then President of the Council and wished to see me as soon as possible. I agreed to go with him the next morning. Accordingly Mr. Hanbury called for me and took me in his carriage to that nobleman's, who received me with great civility; and after some questions respecting the present state of affairs in America and discourse thereupon, he said to me: "You Americans have wrong ideas of the nature of your constitution; you contend that the king's instructions to his governors are not laws, and think yourselves at liberty to regard or disregard them at your own discretion. But those instructions are not like the pocket instructions given to a minister going abroad, for regulating his conduct in some trifling point of ceremony. They

re first drawn up by judges learned in the laws; they re then considered, debated, and perhaps amended n Council, after which they are signed by the king. They are then, so far as they relate to you, the *law of he land*, for the king is the LEGISLATOR OF THE COLO-IES." I told his lordship this was new doctrine to ne. I had always understood from our charters that ur laws were to be made by our Assemblies, to be resented indeed to the king for his royal assent, but hat being once given the king could not repeal or lter them. And as the Assemblies could not make ermanent laws without his assent, so neither could e make a law for them without theirs. He assured ne I was totally mistaken. I did not think so, how-ver, and his lordship's conversation having a little larmed me as to what might be the sentiments of the ourt concerning us, I wrote it down as soon as I re-urned to my lodgings. I recollected that about wenty years before, a clause in a bill brought into Parliament by the ministry had proposed to make the ing's instructions laws in the colonies, but the clause vas thrown out by the Commons, for which we adored hem as our friends and friends of liberty, till by their onduct towards us in 1765 it seemed that they had efused that point of sovereignty to the king only hat they might reserve it for themselves.

After some days, Dr. Fothergill having spoken to he proprietaries, they agreed to a meeting with me t Mr. T. Penn's house in Spring Garden. The con-ersation at first consisted of mutual declarations of lisposition to reasonable accommodations, but I sup-ose each party had its own ideas of what should be neant by *reasonable*. We then went into considera-ion of our several points of complaint, which I enu-

merated. The proprietaries justified their conduct as well as they could, and I the Assembly's. We now appeared very wide, and so far from each other in our opinions as to discourage all hope of agreement. However, it was concluded that I should give them the heads of our complaints in writing, and they promised then to consider them. I did so soon after, but they put the paper into the hands of their solicitor, Ferdinand John Paris, who managed for them all their law business in their great suit with the neighboring proprietary of Maryland, Lord Baltimore, which had subsisted seventy years, and wrote for them all their papers and messages in their dispute with the Assembly. He was a proud, angry man, and as I had occasionally in the answers of the Assembly treated his papers with some severity, they being really weak in point of argument and haughty in expression, he had conceived a mortal enmity to me, which discovering itself whenever we met, I declined the proprietary's proposal that he and I should discuss the heads of complaint between our two selves and refused treating with any one but them. They then by his advice put the paper into the hands of the Attorney and Solicitor-General for their opinion and counsel upon it, where it lay unanswered a year wanting eight days, during which time I made frequent demands of an answer from the proprietaries, but without obtaining any other than that they had not yet received the opinion of the Attorney and Solicitor-General. What it was when they did receive it I never learnt, for they did not communicate it to me, but sent a long message to the Assembly drawn and signed by Paris, reciting my paper, complaining of its want of formality, as a rudeness on my

part, and giving a flimsy justification of their conduct, adding that they should be willing to accommodate matters if the Assembly would send out *some person of candor* to treat with them for that purpose, intimating thereby that I was not such.

The want of formality or rudeness was, probably, my not having addressed the paper to them with their assumed titles of True and Absolute Proprietaries of the Province of Pennsylvania, which I omitted as not thinking it necessary in a paper, the intention of which was only to reduce to a certainty by writing, what in conversation I had delivered *viva voce*.

But during this delay, the Assembly having prevailed with Governor Denny to pass an act taxing the proprietary estate in common with the estates of the people, which was the grand point in dispute, they omitted answering the message.

When this act however came over, the proprietaries, counselled by Paris, determined to oppose its receiving the royal assent. Accordingly they petitioned the king in Council, and a hearing was appointed in which two lawyers were employed by them against the act, and two by me in support of it. They alleged that the act was intended to load the proprietary estate in order to spare those of the people, and that if it were suffered to continue in force, and the proprietaries, who were in odium with the people, left to their mercy in proportioning the taxes, they would inevitably be ruined. We replied that the act had no such intention, and would have no such effect. That the assessors were honest and discreet men under an oath to assess fairly and equitably, and that any advantage each of them might expect in lessening his own tax by augmenting that of the proprietaries

was too trifling to induce them to perjure themselves. This is the purport of what I remember as urged by both sides, except that we insisted strongly on the mischievous consequences that must attend a repeal, for that the money, £100,000, being printed and given to the king's use, expended in his service, and now spread among the people, the repeal would strike it dead in their hands to the ruin of many, and the total discouragement of future grants, and the selfishness of the proprietors in soliciting such a general catastrophe, merely from a groundless fear of their estate being taxed too highly, was insisted on in the strongest terms. On this, Lord Mansfield, one of the counsel, rose, and beckoning me took me into the clerk's chamber, while the lawyers were pleading, and asked me if I was really of opinion that no injury would be done the proprietary estate in the execution of the act. I said, certainly. "Then," says he, "you can have little objection to enter into an engagement to assure that point." I answered, "None at all." He then called in Paris, and after some discourse, his lordship's proposition was accepted on both sides; a paper to the purpose was drawn up by the Clerk of the Council, which I signed with Mr. Charles, who was also an Agent of the Province for their ordinary affairs, when Lord Mansfield returned to the Council Chamber, where finally the law was allowed to pass. Some changes were however recommended, and we also engaged they should be made by a subsequent law, but the Assembly did not think them necessary; for one year's tax having been levied by the act before the order of Council arrived, they appointed a committee to examine the proceedings of the assessors, and on this committee they put several

articular friends of the proprietaries. After a full nquiry, they unanimously signed a report that they ound the tax had been assessed with perfect equity.

The Assembly looked into my entering into the rst part of the engagement as an essential service to he Province, since it secured the credit of the paper oney then spread over all the country. They gave e their thanks in form when I returned. But the roprietaries were enraged at Governor Denny for aving passed the act, and turned him out with hreats of suing him for breach of instructions which e had given bond to observe. He, however, having one it at the instance of the General, and for His Iajesty's service, and having some powerful interest t court, despised the threats and they were never put n execution.

NOTES

PAGE

1 *Dear Son.* This was William Franklin who was the last Royal Governor of New Jersey. He remained loyal to England during the Revolution and later took up his residence in that country.

leisure. It is perhaps worth noting that Franklin is writing from the summer home of the Bishop of St. Asaph's. This prelate, Dr. Jonathan Shipley, was one of the few who defended the cause of the Colonies.

2 *second edition.* Franklin's long experience as a printer and publisher made it natural for him to think of life in terms of books. The idea of making revisions in a second edition is also found in the epitaph he composed for himself when he was a printer twenty-two years old. (See Introduction, p. xix.) In the *Autobiography* there are frequent references to his mistakes, which he called *errata.*

3 *Northamptonshire.* The same county from which George Washington's grandfather emigrated.

the name of Franklin. In its earlier usage in England, *franklin,* or *frankeleyn,* meant a freeholder or country gentleman. One of the characters described in the *Prologue* of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales* is the Franklyn.

freehold. Real estate held by inheritance.

smith's business. Originally a smith was one who worked on metals with a hammer, beating them into shape. Later the word was used in various compounds to indicate a special kind of worker, black*smith,* gold*smith,* tin*smith.* The commonness of the proper noun *Smith,* is evidence of the wide use of the word.

4 *scrivener.* A public writer, office lawyer, or notary.

January 6, old style. January 17, as we now reckon dates.

transmigration. Transmigration of souls is the theory held by some of the passing of a soul at death into another body, either of a human or of an animal. The meaning

GE

here is that Benjamin Franklin's traits were so similar to those of his uncle Thomas that if Thomas had died on the day Franklin was born, "one might have supposed a transmigration" (of souls).

5 *specimen.* An acrostic, the first letter of each line was so planned as to spell Franklin's name. The verses of the acrostic consisted of good advice.

folio — quarto — octavo. Folio — formed of sheets folded once, making four pages. Quarto — having four leaves, eight pages to the sheet. Octavo — having eight leaves to the sheet, sixteen pages.

Mary Tudor, "Bloody Mary," was the daughter of Henry VIII and Catherine of Aragon; she was the wife of Philip II of Spain. It was in her reign (1553–1558) that Franklin's ancestors, like other Protestants, were in danger because of their religion.

6 *Church of England.* The recognized state church (Episcopal).

Charles the Second's reign, 1660–1685.

outed. Turned out of their positions in the Church of England for not complying with the established usages, such as the use of the prayer-book.

conventicles. The term was used in England to refer to gatherings of worshipers who were dissenters from the Church of England.

homespun verse. Homemade verse. The term homespun was usually applied to the coarse cloth woven by the colonists. Franklin wore a suit of such material when he appeared at the court of Louis XVI of France.

7 *Sherburne.* On the island of Nantucket.

grammar school. In Franklin's time, a school in which Latin was taught. Such a school would be chosen by a boy's parents, if they intended to send him to college. Franklin attended the small wooden schoolhouse which gave the name to the present School Street of Boston. The school building stood near where the statue of Franklin now stands before the City Hall.

tithe of his sons. Tenth of his sons. According to the religious custom of the ancient Hebrews, one tenth of all the produce of lands and herds was set apart for the support of the Levites (priests).

PAGE

9 *mill pond.* A tract of land in Boston, between Haymarket Square and Causeway Street. The latter street was so named from a causeway which separated the pond from the outer water.

emmets. Ants.

that nothing was useful which was not honest. A philosophy quite similar to Franklin's own in later life.

10 *At his table.* The custom of educating children in this way was quite common in the earlier history of this country.

11 *their grave.* In the old Granary Burial Ground on Tremont Street north of the Park Street Church. The burial ground took its name from the old town granary which once stood upon the site of the Park Street Church. The marble stone with its inscription having crumbled, a new and larger monument was raised over the grave in 1827 and the original inscription was repeated on it.

12 *chapmen's books.* Books sold by chapmen, or small dealers. They were usually small and poorly printed — what we would call "cheap editions" to-day.

letters. Type.

indentures. Look up the origin of this word.

13 *journeyman's wages.* A journeyman was one who had learned his trade, as distinguished from an apprentice on the one hand, and a foreman on the other.

14 *Grubb Street ballad style.* Grubb Street, in London, was frequented by struggling writers, many of whom suffered from poverty. Their style was likely to be stiff and commonplace.

15 *Spectator.* A journal issued in London by Addison and Steele in 1711–12. It consisted largely of essays on social and ethical problems. As a model of English prose it was not surpassed by anything that appeared in the eighteenth century, which was an age of prose. After the prejudice against it because of its nonreligious character had died out, it exerted a great influence upon the Colonies, particularly at the time when Franklin came under its spell.

18 *Messrs. du Port Royal.* At the abbey of Port Royal, near Versailles, France, a group of learned and religious men were associated in the early seventeenth century; they produced many valuable books.

GE

3 *Socratic method.* Originated by Socrates, the famous Greek philosopher. It consisted of the use of skilful questions that gradually led the opponent to admit that he was mistaken in his views.

2 *New England Courant.* Franklin's memory was at fault, as the *New England Courant* was the fourth newspaper to be published in America. It was preceded by the *Boston News Letter* (1704), the *Boston Gazette* (1719), and the *American Weekly Mercury* (1719). The press on which the *New England Courant* was printed may still be seen in Newport, Rhode Island, at the office of the *Newport Mercury* which James Franklin later founded.

3 *the first errata.* *Errata*, Latin plural of *erratum*, an error, is used frequently by Franklin to refer to the mistakes he made in life. His early reference to life as a book (see note on page 2) suggests that he may have got the expression from its use in connection with the printing of books. A slip of paper is sometimes inserted inside the front cover of a book in its first edition, containing a list of errors under the caption, *Errata.*

25 *Kill.* Creek.

shock pate. A combination of two old words. Shock is the word that is applied to a sheaf or bundle of grain, bound together with the straw. Pate is an old word for head. Shock pate means, then, the long hair that grows upon the top of the head, which would float loose in the water and be easy to catch hold of.

26 *halloed to us.* Here, as often, the term suggests calling by putting the hands to the mouth, like a megaphone, to spread the sound.

27 *travesty the Bible in doggerel verse.* To travesty is to burlesque or mock. Doggerel verse is stiff wooden verse, without any of the graceful rhythm of real poetry.

Burlington. In New Jersey.

29 *Dutch dollar.* All the metal currency of the Colonies was of foreign coinage.

30 *the great meeting-house.* On the southwest corner of Second and Market Streets.

Quakers. Also known as "The Society of Friends." A religious sect founded by George Fox in England in 1648.

PAGE

The name Quakers was applied to them because of Fox's emphasis on the idea of trembling at the word of the Lord. A characteristic of Quakers that is frequently referred to by Franklin is their opposition to war, under any and all circumstances.

Three Mariners. The use of such signs before inns and taverns was very general in England during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries.

31 *composing stick.* A small metal tray, held by the compositor in his left hand, into which he sets the type. An adjusting device makes it possible to set the type in various widths or measures.

sophister. A false or tricky reasoner.

32 *French prophets.* Probably a reference to a sect of French Protestants called Camisards.

33 *master of a sloop.* A sloop is a single-masted sailing vessel, with broad beam and light draft.

promising parts. One of the many meanings of the word part is a capacity or talent. It is usually employed, as in this case, in the plural.

36 *a piece of eight.* A Spanish dollar or piaster. Spoken of as "a piece of eight" because the figure 8 appeared on the coin.

37 *lampooning.* Ridiculing.

41 *governor.* Governor Keith, who took the part of the Colonists.

one hundred pounds sterling. A little less than $500. The pound sterling is equal to $4.8665 in American money.

42 *Annis.* Captain of the *London-Hope.*

43 *Socratic method.* See note on page 18.

Mosaic law. The ancient ceremonial law, attributed to Moses and named accordingly. It is contained in the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Bible), Joshua, and Ezekiel (XL–XLVIII).

44 *Lent.* Lent is a period of fasting of forty days, preceding Easter, very generally observed by the Episcopal and Roman Catholic Churches.

flesh-pots of Egypt. A comparison to the murmuring of the children of Israel against Moses and Aaron in the wilderness. They said they would rather have died

PAGE

among the flesh-pots back in Egypt than starve in the wilderness. The Biblical reference is Exodus XVI, 3: "And the children of Israel said unto them (Moses and Aaron), Would to God we had died by the hand of the Lord in the land of Egypt, when we sat by the flesh-pots, and when we did eat bread to the full; for ye have brought us forth into this wilderness, to kill this whole country with hunger."

45 *Ralph.* As Franklin observes James Ralph became a successful prose writer, receiving a pension from George III for his history of England.

47 *discovered.* Disclosed.

Pope cured him. Alexander Pope (1688–1744), in his *Dunciad*, characterized his critics and contemporary poets as dunces. The poem contains these lines, to which Franklin may have referred:

> "Silence, ye wolves! while Ralph to Cynthia howls,
> And makes night hideous — answer him ye owls."

49 *Hamilton, Andrew.* Donor of Independence Hall.

51 *to be bound for him.* To give security for the payment of his note. He had failed to meet it and his guarantor had to.

proprietaries. Sons of William Penn.

Little Britain. It got its name from a district in the central part of London.

52 *pistoles.* Spanish coins, worth about four dollars each.

Wilkes. A popular comedian.

hackney writer. One who writes anything he can sell to a publisher, in order to make a living; hence one who has little style or literary ability.

Temple. A law college and place of residence for lawyers in London.

53 *coffee-house.* A public house where coffee and other refreshments were served. These places were very popular centers of social life in London in the eighteenth century. Men of the same profession met at certain coffee-houses, much in the manner of clubs.

Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727). Famous English natural philosopher and mathematician. Probably best known for his discovery of the law of gravitation. President of the Royal Society. Buried in Westminster Abbey.

PAGE

54 *Sir Hans Sloane.* An English physician and naturalist. On his death in 1753 he left a large collection of curiosities and specimens of natural history, which became the foundation of the British Museum.

epic poem. A poem of considerable length that deals with heroic deeds.

55 *pursuing the Muses.* The Muses were the nine daughters of Jupiter, who presided over the arts and sciences. Pursuing the Muses means here making an attempt to write poetry.

form of types. The *form* was the steel frame or *chase* into which the type was *locked* when made up into a page. Naturally a good-sized chase filled with type would be very heavy.

Water-American. Expressive of contempt of both his morals and his nationality.

56 *bien venu.* A literal translation of the French is "well come" — *welcome.*

sorts. *Sorts* are characters or spaces in a font of type in addition to the regular number. They constitute a kind of reserve, to be drawn on when a job requires an unusually large number of any one letter.

chapel ghost. The term chapel was early used to refer to a printing office. The usage is said to be due to the fact that printing was first carried on in England in a chapel near Westminster Abbey.

57 *riggite.* A rare word. The word rig is an old word for joke. Hence a riggite is one given to rigs, or jokes.

Saint Monday. The workmen were paid on Saturday, spent their money for drink, and were consequently unable to work on Monday, thereby making that day a holiday. The original meaning of holiday was holy day; hence Saint Monday.

58 *anchovy.* A small fish of the herring family.

59 *Saint Veronica.* According to a mediæval legend, a maiden offered her handkerchief to Christ on His way to Calvary. He wiped the sweat from his brow and returned the handkerchief to the maiden. After He had gone, she found a perfect likeness of the Saviour on it. The maiden became *Saint Veronica*, the name coming

AGE

from the Latin *vera icon*, true likeness. She is commemorated on February 4.

59 *Don Saltero.* Formerly a servant of Sir Hans Sloane. The curiosities on view at his coffeehouse at Chelsea had been given him by his former master.

60 *compounded.* Settled by compromise, distributing his assets among his creditors, so much on the dollar. Today we should say that he took advantage of the bankruptcy law.

62 *plan.* This plan was not found in the manuscript journal.

64 *nuncupative will.* Oral rather than written.

65 *whose time . . . he had bought.* Webb had come to America without funds and had sold himself to pay for his passage and keeping.

66 *crimp's bill.* A *crimp* was a tricky agent who lured men by false inducements to ship as sailors.

puncheons — matrices. Puncheons were the type faces used as punches; matrices were the metal slugs that bore the new type faces, when cast from the die.

67 *factotum.* A close rendering of the Latin is, one who does all — a doer of all kinds of work.

70 *Dissenting way.* The American colonists were dissenters from the Church of England.

Revelation. The theory that the nature and will of God are revealed to man by signs and wonders, through faith, or by the Holy Spirit.

Deism. The belief in a personal God.

71 See Dryden's *Œdipus* III.

72 *glazier.* Probably here one who sets glass in window frames.

73 *croakers.* Pessimists. The term originated in the gloomy sound of the croaking of frogs.

Junto. A group of men combined for some purpose, often a political one. For instance, the cabinet council of Charles II was called a *junto.*

74 *contraband.* Forbidden or prohibited by law or treaty. Frequently used in a military way.

pecuniary penalties. Punishments in money — fines.

75 *punning.* A *pun* is a play on words whereby a word is used interchangeably with another word that has the

PAGE

same sound but a different meaning. Punning was very popular in Shakespeare's time. In *Twelfth Night* there is a pun on *heart* (an organ of the body) and *hart* (a deer). While Queen Elizabeth (1558–1603) said that the pun was her favorite form of humor, punning came to be regarded later as a somewhat degraded form of wit. Franklin seems to imply such an attitude here.

76 *reduced to pi.* The type was jumbled and completely mixed up. *Pi* is the expression commonly used in a print-shop to refer to type that has become mixed up. This mixing may happen when the type is not properly locked in the chase and falls to the floor.

77 *Busy Body.* A busybody is a person who meddles in other people's affairs.

78 *dispute then going on between Governor Burnet and the Massachusetts Assembly.* The Massachusetts General Court refused to pay the governor a fixed salary as demanded by the king, but offered to make a present larger than the salary. The king was insistent, and the people regarded the demand for a salary as a tax imposed upon them. The break that resulted was one of the events that led to the War for Independence.

79 *ingenuous letter.* Note that the word is *ingenuous*, not *ingenious*. *Ingenuous* means sincere; *ingenious* means clever.

81 "*To be let.*" Note the passive form and the exact use of English implied thereby. Logically, the active infinitive requires an object; hence the passive infinitive, as here used, is really correct. The distinction is a fine point, although such signs are still to be found in New England.

82 *that government.* That of Delaware Counties.

83 *Barbadoes.* Also spelled Barbados. The most easterly of the West India Islands — a British possession since 1625. It was visited by George Washington and his invalid brother, Laurence, in 1752.

86 *The match.* Between Miss Read and Rogers. See text, page 63.

87 *library.* America's first circulating library.

88 *Conveyancer.* One who specializes in the law that covers the transferring of property.

PAGE

89 *gave perpetuity to the company.* Guaranteed its continuous existence. The books were at first kept in the chamber of one of Franklin's friends; the librarian was in attendance an hour on Wednesday and two hours on Saturday. After eight years, that is, in 1740, a room was obtained in the State House, and the next year Franklin printed a catalogue of the library; in 1773 another removal was made to Carpenters' Hall, and in 1790 the Philadelphia Library was housed in the building which it still occupies. A tablet was inserted in the building bearing this inscription:

Be it remembered
in honor of the Philadelphia youth
(then chiefly artificers)
that in MDCCXXXI
they cheerfully,
at the instance of Benjamin Franklin,
one of their number,
instituted the Philadelphia Library
which, though small at first,
is become highly valuable and extensively useful,
and which the walls of this edifice
are now destined to contain and preserve:
the first stone of whose foundation
was here placed
the thirty-first day of August, 1789.

The inscription was prepared by Franklin, with the exception of the reference to himself, which was inserted by the committee.

97 *Pythagoras.* Greek philosopher about 600 B.C.

105 *extensive meaning.* Broad, as distinguished from *intensive,* narrow.

110 *broadside.* A single sheet of paper, printed on one side only. Therefore, suitable "to be stuck up in houses."

111 *excluded all libelling and personal abuse.* In this view of newspaper ethics, Franklin was a pioneer. To-day the leading newspapers subscribe to a code of ethics, usually prepared and adopted by a state association. Franklin's principles would be included in such a code.

PAGE

111 *useful or entertaining.* Purposes that are recognized by the modern newspaper.

112 *disgrace their profession.* The higher conception of the newspaper to-day tends to give journalism rank as a profession.

113 *different persuasions.* Different creeds or religious beliefs.

pro and con. Latin: for and against.

116 *inoculation.* Vaccination was as yet unknown. *Inoculation* consisted in giving the disease to healthy persons who might then be immune when it became an epidemic.

119 *watch.* Police.

120 *ragamuffins.* A ragamuffin is a person who wears ragged or tattered clothing. The word was current in England in Franklin's day.

123 *Reverend Mr. Whitefield.* George Whitefield (1714–1770), one of the leaders of the Methodist movement, who became estranged from John Wesley, its founder. He was noted as an evangelist in both England and America.

Westminster Hall. A hall in London in which some of the earlier sessions of Parliament were held.

124 *Mufti of Constantinople . . . Mohammedanism.* Mufti is an Arabic word, used to denote an official expounder of the Koran and Mohammedan law. The Koran is the bible or sacred book of the Mohammedans.

128 *litera scripta manet.* Latin: letters written remain (while that which is spoken is forgotten).

130 *Philosophical Society.* The American Philosophical Society, which still continues. Six of the nine original members belonged to the Junto.

131 *lottery.* At this time a lottery was looked upon as a perfectly legitimate way of getting money for public or philanthropic purposes. Later it came to be regarded as a form of gambling.

131 *merlons.* Ramparts.

137 *other grain.* A sly deception whereby the term was used to cover ammunition, just as *fire-engine* was used to cover cannon.

Dunkers. A religious sect that originated in Germany

AGE

early in the eighteenth century. On account of persecutions, the founders fled to Holland and then came to America. The largest settlement was at Germantown, Pennsylvania. They baptised their converts by plunging.

38 *Open stove.* Still commonly known as the Franklin open fireplace. The chimneys in Franklin's time were so built as to waste fuel and consume heat.

39 *patent.* The right of exclusive control, given to inventors to protect them from those who would seize the idea, manufacture the device, and reap the financial reward. Franklin goes on to show that the London ironmonger did this very thing.

41 *This was the building.* On the west side of Fourth Street, below Arch.

42 *University of Philadelphia.* Later became the University of Pennsylvania.

52 *Vauxhall.* A very popular pleasure resort in London, opened in 1661 and continued to 1859.

57 *College of Cambridge.* Harvard College at Cambridge, Mass., now a part of Harvard University.

Master of Arts. The degree may be either earned or honorary. In this case it was honorary and was bestowed for the reasons given by Franklin.

Lords of Trade. Organized in the seventeenth century. The colonial governors made their reports to the Lords of Trade. One of the duties of this board was to secure obedience to the crown from the colonies.

Six Nations. In 1714 six powerful Indian tribes formed this alliance.

60 *an acute sophister.* See note on page 31.

61 *Sancho Panza.* The Squire of Don Quixote in Cervantes' famous humorous romance (Spanish) — one of the classics of all time. Sancho Panza was a short, fat rustic who had no "spirituality" but a lot of common sense. He rode upon a donkey, "Dapple," and became famous for his proverbs. As indicated here, he had some original ideas about government. Reference is frequently made to "Sancho Panza's government."

63 *War.* War with France was not declared until 1756, but

PAGE

an attempt had been made by colonists under Washington to prevent the French from carrying out their intention of seizing land in the valley of the Ohio River. General Braddock had come to assist the colonists in this project.

Loan Office. An office established by the colony to aid the Government by loans from the people.

170 *subaltern.* As a military term, subaltern refers to an officer who ranks below a captain.

172 *Fort Duquesne.* Stood on the present site of the city of Pittsburgh. Washington, who was an aide-de-camp of General Braddock's, gave him a warning quite similar to that of Franklin regarding the dangers of Indian warfare.

175 *Hume, David* (1711–1776). Famous historian and philosopher.

179 *Moravians.* A religious sect originating in Bohemia at the time of John Huss (1373–1415). They were especially zealous in evangelism and conducting missions. They were relatively numerous in Franklin's time.

181 *priming.* The flint-locks were primed with powder which sparks from the flint ignited.

182 *perch.* The pole connecting the fore and hind wheels of the wagons.

185 *stock.* Here means fund.

196 *Agent.* The colonies had from time to time sent agents to England to protect their interests.

198 *entre nous.* French — between ourselves, confidentially.

200 *Pitt, William* (1708–1778). A loyal friend of the colonies. He became Prime Minister of England and later Earl of Chatham.

205 *Watches.* The groups of men and officers into which a ship's crew is divided. Each watch has charge of the ship for a period of hours, usually four. These periods are also called watches.

206 *studding-sails.* Light sails that are set at the side of the mainsail to increase the speed of the vessel in free winds.

yaw of the ship. A variation from the straight course in steering.

211 *viva voce.* Latin — by word of mouth.

QUESTIONS FOR STUDY AND REVIEW

CHAPTER I. PARENTAGE AND BOYHOOD

1. What reasons did Franklin give for writing the *Autobiography?*
2. What seems to have been his interest in his ancestors?
3. How does his method of tracing the name *Franklin* explain the origin of many English surnames, such as *Baker, Carpenter, Weaver?*
4. Have you ever accounted for your own surname?
5. What is the meaning of surname and of Christian name?
6. What views on religion were held by Franklin's family?
7. Why did Benjamin's father select him especially for service in the Church?
8. Why did his father change his plans?
9. How may this have affected Franklin's entire future?
10. How did Franklin show his appreciation of his father by the description he gave of his "person and character?"
11. How did he show his appreciation of his parents by the inscription he placed over their graves?
12. What was Franklin's interest in books?
13. What was the value of the books he read, judging by their titles?
14. Why did Franklin's father decide to make him a printer?
15. What is the argument for and against such a method of determining a boy's career?
16. What was the value of Franklin's method of learning to write by using the *Spectator?*
17. How might we profit to-day by making use, as Franklin did, of the Socratic method in our conversation?
18. Was Franklin entirely right in his attitude toward the mistreatment he received from his brother, or were there two sides?
19. How did the quarrel lead to Franklin's committing one of the first *errata* of his life?
20. What was Franklin's condition when he arrived in New York?

CHAPTER II. SEEKING HIS FORTUNE

1. Why did Franklin go on to Philadelphia instead of remaining in New York as he had intended?
2. What picture do you have of Franklin going up Market Street, eating his rolls? What are your impressions of his character?

3. What were Franklin's impressions of Keimer and his shop?
4. What unusual interest did the Governor, Sir William Keith, take in Franklin?
5. Why did Franklin decide to return to Boston?
6. How was he received by his family?
7. How did Franklin's father receive Governor Keith's letter?
8. Why did Franklin embark a second time from New York?
9. How did the meeting of his old friend Collins in New York prove a disadvantage to Franklin?
10. What recognition did Franklin receive from Governor Burnet of New York?
11. What did Franklin learn from his experiences with Vernon's money?
12. How can you account for Governor Keith's making Franklin such a generous offer?
13. Why was it thought best by Miss Read's mother to delay the young woman's marriage to Franklin until after his return from England?
14. What were Franklin's impressions of his new acquaintance, James Ralph, the poet?
15. What were Franklin's thoughts of Governor Keith just before he (Franklin) embarked for England?
16. Would he have been justified in staying at home?

CHAPTER III. ADVENTURES IN LONDON

1. What were Franklin's impressions of Governor Keith after he (Franklin) had arrived in London?
2. How did Franklin's knowledge of the printer's trade help him out in this crisis?
3. What did he think about his neglecting to write Miss Read?
4. How are Franklin's experiences in the print-shop as the "Water-American" of present-day interest?
5. What lessons did Franklin learn from the old lady who lived in the garret?
6. What do you think would have been the effect on Franklin of following Wygate's proposal?
7. Why did Franklin decide to give up printing and return to Philadelphia with Denham?
8. What was Franklin's estimate of the value of history of some eighteen months in England?

CHAPTER IV. RETURN TO PHILADELPHIA

1. How was Franklin forced back into the printing business soon after his return to Philadelphia?

2. What circumstances led to his forming a partnership with Meredith?

3. What inventory did Franklin give of the religious beliefs he held at this time?

4. What did Franklin learn from his gratitude to George House for bringing the first job to the new printing firm?

5. What were the plans and purpose of the JUNTO club?

CHAPTER V. IN BUSINESS FOR HIMSELF

1. How did Franklin find an opportunity to dissolve his partnership with Meredith?

2. What circumstances led Franklin to print his pamphlet on *The Nature and Necessity of a Paper Currency?*

3. What financial advantage resulted to him? Was he justified in accepting it?

4. What circumstances made Franklin's marriage to Miss Read happy? Why did he regard the marriage as correcting a "great erratum"?

5. What was Franklin's first "project of a public nature"? How has the passing of time since his death proved the value of it?

6. What application does Franklin make of the English proverb, "He that would thrive, must ask his wife"?

7. What little touch of domestic life is added to the story of Franklin's life by the incident of the China bowl and the silver spoon?

8. What was Franklin's attitude toward public worship?

9. What was Franklin's project for "arriving at moral perfection"?

10. Was it natural that Franklin should have the most trouble with his "scheme of Order"? Or did it indicate some weakness in his character? How would your own experience compare with his?

11. What is the point of the story of the "speckled ax"?

12. What were Franklin's conclusions in his old age on his weakness in the matter of order?

13. Why did Franklin add humility as a thirteenth in his list of virtues?

14. What does he say of the persistence of pride?

CHAPTER VI. SELF-EDUCATION

1. What was Franklin's project of *The Society of the Free and Easy?*

2. What was Franklin's purpose in publishing *Poor Richard's Almanac?*

3. What do you get from the facsimile page, printed opposite page 110?

4. What ideals did Franklin hold for his newspaper?

5. How did Franklin combine chess and Italian?

6. What unique idea did Franklin have of relating the study of Latin to the modern languages? Why isn't it used to-day?

7. Why were branches formed of the JUNTO club?

8. What was the significance of the names adopted for the branches?

9. What were Franklin's ideas on improving the city watch? How have his reforms continued to the present?

10. How did Franklin establish the first volunteer fire department? What developments in fire-fighting equipment and fire prevention have taken place in recent years? Have you ever seen a volunteer fire department put out a fire? How do their methods differ from those of a paid department? Why is an efficient paid fire department a good investment for taxpayers?

CHAPTER VII. GEORGE WHITEFIELD

1. Why did Franklin approve the preaching of George Whitefield and the building of a tabernacle for him?

2. What is the humor of Franklin's response to Whitefield's appeal on taking up the collection?

3. What was Franklin's opinion of Whitefield's honesty?

4. How did Franklin satisfy himself of the marvelous power of Whitefield's voice?

5. Why did Franklin think Whitefield would have done better to confine himself to preaching without making an attempt at writing?

CHAPTER VIII. BEGINNING OF PUBLIC LIFE

1. Why was Franklin interested in establishing a *Philosophical Society?*

2. Why was Franklin concerned about the "defenseless condition of the Colonies"?

3. How did he go about promoting the formation of the Philadelphia regiment?

4. Why did he decline to serve as Colonel?

5. What skill and tact did he show in getting around the religious objections of the Quakers to war and the military?

6. What is the humor of the use of such terms as *other grain* and *fire-engine?*

7. Why did Franklin think the modesty of the Dunkers "perhaps a singular instance in the history of mankind"?

8. Why did Franklin think his invention of the open stove worthy mention in the *Autobiography?* Why did he decline to take a atent on the stove? How did the London ironmonger profit by ranklin's invention?

CHAPTER IX. A PUBLIC-SPIRITED GENTLEMAN

1. How did Franklin go about the establishment of the academy at later became the University of Pennsylvania? Why was he terested in such a project?

2. What circumstances led Franklin to turn from business to ilosophical studies? Why was he so soon interrupted by civic fairs? Did he object?

3. What were Franklin's impressions of the Indians at Carlisle?

4. What was the clever plan that Franklin suggested to the everend Gilbert Tennent for raising funds for building the new eeting-house?

CHAPTER X. A PHILADELPHIA CITIZEN

1. How did Franklin promote a movement for street-cleaning in hiladelphia?

2. What proposal did Franklin make to Dr. Fothergill for cleaning he streets of London and Westminster? How did he come to doubt he practicability of his own scheme later?

3. What was the value of his idea for the improvement of street mps?

4. Why were Harvard and Yale justified in conferring the honorry degree of Master of Arts on Franklin?

5. What was Franklin's advice to Governor Morris on avoiding isputes?

6. What difficulty arose over taxing the proprietary estates?

CHAPTER XI. IN THE SERVICE OF THE KING

1. Why was General Braddock sent to America with troops?

2. Why was Franklin given the commission of procuring horses, agons, and supplies for the British troops?

3. What was the basis of Franklin's appeal?

4. What advice did Franklin give General Braddock on the dangers of Indian warfare?

5. Why is Braddock's defeat considered one of the worst and most unnecessary in history?

6. How do you interpret his dying words, "*We shall better know how to deal with them another time*"?

7. Why was Franklin unwilling to contribute to the expense of the "grand firework," which was to be used in celebrating the fall of Fort Duquesne?

CHAPTER XII. COMMON SENSE IN WAR MATTERS

1. What traits of character did Franklin show in the part he had in building the fort at Gnadenhut?
2. What is the humor of Franklin's suggestion to the Reverend Mr. Beatty as to a practical way of securing better attendance at prayers? Was Mr. Beatty justified in accepting the suggestion?
3. What interesting things did Franklin learn about the Moravians? What has been their history since that time?
4. How was Franklin embarrassed by his military escort? How did those who intended to do him honor really do him harm?

CHAPTER XIII. FRANKLIN THE PHILOSOPHER

1. How did Franklin show a generous attitude in his scientific experiments?
2. How did Franklin offend the Abbé Nollet? Why did Franklin decide not to answer him?
3. What recognition was given to Franklin by the new governor, Captain Denny?
4. How did Franklin declare his independence of proprietary favors?
5. What did it mean to the Colonies to have him take this stand?
6. How did it lead to his being sent to England as an agent?

CHAPTER XIV. DEPARTURE FOR ENGLAND

1. What was the point of Franklin's comparison of Lord Loudoun to St. George on the sign?
2. What criticism did Franklin pass on Lord Loudoun's command?
3. How did Lord Loudoun treat Franklin's claim for supplies furnished to General Braddock?
4. What practical experiments in shipbuilding did Franklin suggest? What caused him to become interested in the subject?

CHAPTER XV. THE AFFAIR WITH THE PROPRIETARIES

1. What was Franklin's mission to England in 1757?
2. What were the results of his mission?
3. How did the Assembly show its appreciation?

QUESTIONS FROM RECENT COLLEGE ENTRANCE EXAMINATIONS[1]

June, 1923 — What to your mind are the advantages of autobiography as a means of portraying character?

Comprehensive, June, 1923 — Choose two books which describe times and conditions different from those of to-day. Point out what there is in each book to make it valuable and interesting reading at the present time.

Comprehensive, September, 1923 — Show what one may learn about a given period from some oration, biography or essay.

June, 1924 — Montaigne said in regard to his essays: "It is myself that I portray." Show how this quotation might be applied to Franklin's autobiography.

Comprehensive, 1924 — Explain specifically what you have gained from reading (*a*) a novel, (*b*) a drama, (*c*) a group of essays or an oration), (*d*) a biography (or a narrative poem).

June, 1925 — Show how Irving, Macaulay, Parkman, or Franklin has increased your knowledge of social backgrounds.

June, 1926 — From your reading what have you learned about the achievements of great men or women that you think might be an inspiration for your own life?

TOPICS FOR ORAL AND WRITTEN COMPOSITION

(Where the topics are based directly on the text, the chapter numbers are given, for convenience of reference)

1. Franklin's Attitude Toward His Ancestors (I)
2. The Interest of Surnames (I)
3. Choosing a Son's Career (I)
4. A Child's Feeling for His Father (I)
5. An Early Interest in Good Books (I)
6. How Franklin Would Learn to Write in the Schools of To-day
7. Family Quarrels (I)
8. The Picture of Franklin and His Rolls (II)
9. Franklin as Miss Read First Saw Him
10. A Character Like Keimer I Have Known (II)
11. Franklin's Unexpected Return to Boston and Welcome Home (II)
12. Meeting an Old Friend (Collins) (II)

[1] Copyright by College Entrance Examination Board.

13. New Friends (Ralph) (II)
14. False Promises (III)
15. The Value of Knowing a Trade (III)
16. Neglecting to Write Letters (III)
17. Standing by Your Convictions (III)
18. The Old Lady in the Garret (III)
19. Tired of London — Longing for Home (III)
20. Partnerships — Advantages and Disadvantages (IV)
21. Religious Beliefs (IV)
22. Junto Clubs (IV)
23. Our Paper Currency — Its Meaning and Value (V)
24. The China Bowl and the Silver Spoon (V)
25. The Value of Public Worship (V)
26. My Own Troubles with Order (V)
27. The Lesson of the "Speckled Ax" (V)
28. The Saving Grace of Humility (V)
29. The Ideals of the Newspaper (VI)
30. Is Time Spent in Playing Games Wasted? (VI)
31. Why I Study (or Do Not Study) Latin (VI)
32. My Personal Opinion of Franklin's Plan for Teaching Latin in the Schools (VI)
33. How Our Local Police Force Might Be Improved
34. A Tribute to Our Fire Fighters
35. Fire-Prevention Week
36. Taking Up the Collection (VII)
37. A Great Speaking Voice (VII)
38. Our National Defense (VIII)
39. Religious Objections to War (VIII)
40. Our National Attitude Toward War
41. Pacifists and Militarists
42. The Fireplace in the Home
43. Franklin and the Kite
44. Honor to Whom Honor Is Due (X)
45. Avoiding Disputes (X)
46. Braddock's Defeat (XI)
47. Real Works and Fireworks (XI)
48. The Military Escort (XII)
49. Secrets of a Useful Life
50. Putting Meaning Into Old Age

SUGGESTIONS FOR SIMPLE DRAMATIZATIONS

(Based on the *Autobiography*)

1. *The Family Table* (I). The Father and Mother, an honored guest, and the children. A conversation by the elders on some topic that would be profitable to the children, the guest taking a leading part.

2. *The Socratic Method* (I). A dialogue between Franklin and his friend Collins on some topic on which they disagree, in which Franklin uses the Socratic method. (Students may prepare in advance, making two copies of the manuscript, and reading the parts in class. Girls as well as boys may take men's parts. Five or six of the dialogues may be selected by the teacher for class presentation and a vote taken to decide which is the best.)

3. *Miss Read's Impressions* (II). A dialogue between Miss Read and her father, in which she gives her impressions of Franklin's "awkward, ridiculous appearance" as he passed her door.

4. *Water vs. Beer* (III). An argument between Franklin and one of the beer-drinking workmen in Watt's printing house in London. Remember that Franklin used the Socratic method and also that he was unable to convince his fellow workmen.

5. *The Old Lady in the Garret* (III). Give the dialogue between Franklin and the old lady, in which he draws out her story, paying special attention to what Franklin may have said on taking his leave.

6. *A Meeting of the Junto Club* (IV). The teacher will announce some topic of local, civic interest. A chairman will be selected to impersonate Franklin. A group of six or seven boys or girls will enter into the discussion of the topic in the manner of the Junto club, impersonating such characters as Joseph Breintnal, Thomas Godfrey, Nicholas Scull, William Parsons, etc.

7. *The "Speckled Ax"* (V). Write the brief dialogue that might have taken place between the smith and the man who brought the ax to be ground.

8. *Franklin and the Collection* (VII). Dramatize, in pantomime only, the scene of the Rev. Mr. Whitefield preaching, the changes in Franklin's attitude, and his emptying his pocket "wholly into the collector's dish, gold and all."

9. *The Honorary Degree* (X). Dramatize the scene of the bestowing of the honorary master's degree upon Benjamin Franklin by the President of Yale or Harvard, attempting to represent what the President might have said and Franklin's manner in receiving the honor.

10. As a climax to the study of the *Autobiography*, the class may represent as allegorical figures the tribute that might be paid to Franklin by the interests, traits, places, and so on which figured in his life. The tributes should be very brief — two or three sentences — and exactly in keeping with the characters by whom they are spoken. The following are given by way of suggestions of characters: Thrift, Industry, Citizenship, Diplomacy, Philadelphia.

INTERESTING BOOKS ON BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

American Statesmen. *Benjamin Franklin.* John J. Morse, Jr. Houghton Mifflin Company.
Benjamin Franklin, As a Man of Letters. John Bach McMaster. Houghton Mifflin Company.
Benjamin Franklin, Printer. John Clyde Oswald. Doubleday, Page & Company.
Benjamin Franklin, Self-Revealed. William Cabell Bruce. G. P. Putnam's Sons.
Benjamin Franklin, The First Civilized American. Phillips Russell. Brentano's.
Famous American Statesmen. Sarah Knowles Bolton. Thomas Y. Crowell Company.
Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin. James Parton. Houghton Mifflin Company.
Makers of America. Emma Lilian Dana. Immigration Publication Society.
The Many-Sided Franklin. Paul Leicester Ford. The Century Company.
The True Benjamin Franklin. Sydney George Fisher. J. B. Lippincott Company.
The True Story of Benjamin Franklin. Eldridge S. Brooks. Lothrop, Lee & Shepard Company.
True Stories of Great Americans, Benjamin Franklin. E. Lawrence Dudley. The Macmillan Company.

APPENDIX

THE following outline of an autobiography was prepared by Franklin, apparently before beginning the work. The first paragraph covers the printed portion. The second intimates what topics the author would have taken up had he been able to finish his work. It would be an interesting task for a student to pick out from his letters what Franklin did say under the several heads in the second paragraph.

My writing. Mrs. Dogood's letters. Differences arise between my Brother and me (his temper and mine); their cause in general. His Newspaper. The Prosecution he suffered. My Examination. Vote of Assembly. His manner of evading it. Whereby I became free. My attempt to get employ with other Printers. He prevents me. Our frequent pleadings before our Father. The final Breach. My Inducements to quit Boston. Manner of coming to a Resolution. My leaving him and going to New York (return to eating flesh); thence to Pennsylvania. The journey, and its events on the Bay at Amboy. The road. Meet with Dr. Brown. His character. His great work. At Burlington. The Good Woman. On the River. My Arrival at Philadelphia. First Meal and first Sleep. Money left. Employment. Lodging. First acquaintance with my afterward Wife. With J. Ralph. With Keimer. Their characters. Osborne. Watson. The Governor takes notice of me. The Occasion and Manner. His character. Offers to set me up. My return to Boston. Voyage and accidents. Reception. My Father dislikes the proposal. I return to New York and Philadelphia. Governor Burnet. J. Collins. The money for Vernon. The Governor's Deceit. Collins not finding employment goes to Barbados much in my Debt. Ralph and I go to England. Disappointment of Governor's Letters. Colonel French his Friend. Cornwallis's Letters. Cabbin. Denham. Hamilton. Arrival in England. Get employment. Ralph not. He is an expense to me. Adventures in England. Write a Pamphlet and print 100. Schemes. Lyons. Dr. Pemberton. My diligence, and yet poor through Ralph. My Landlady. Her character. Wy-

gate. Wilkes. Cibber. Plays. Books I borrowed. Preachers I heard. Redmayne. At Watts's. Temperance. Ghost. Conduct and Influence among the Men. Persuaded by Mr. Denham to return with him to Philadelphia and be his clerk. Our voyage and arrival. My resolutions in Writing. My Sickness. His Death. Found D. R. married. Go to work again with Keimer. Terms. His ill usage of me. My Resentment. Saying of Decow. My Friends at Burlington. Agreement with H. Meredith to set up in Partnership. Do so. Success with the Assembly. Hamilton's Friendship. Sewell's History. Gazette. Paper money. Webb. Writing Busy Body. Breintnal. Godfrey. His Character. Suit against us. Offer of my Friends, Coleman and Grace. Continue the Business, and M. goes to Carolina. Pamphlet on Paper Money. Gazette from Keimer. Junto credit; its plan. Marry. Library erected. Manner of conducting the project. Its plan and utility. Children. Almanac. The use I made of it. Great industry. Constant study. Father's Remark and Advice upon Diligence. Carolina Partnership. Learn French and German. Journey to Boston after ten years. Affection of my Brother. His Death, and leaving me his Son. Art of Virtue. Occasion. City Watch amended. Post-office. Spotswood. Bradford's Behavior. Clerk of Assembly. Lose one of my Sons. Project of subordinate Juntos. Write occasionally in the papers. Success in Business. Fire companies. Engines. Go again to Boston in 1743. See Dr. Spence. Whitefield. My connection with him. His generosity to me. My returns. Church Differences. My part in them. Propose a College. Not then prosecuted. Propose and establish a Philosophical Society. War. Electricity. My first knowledge of it. Partnership with D. Hall, &c. Dispute in Assembly upon Defence. Project for it. Plain Truth. Its success. Ten thousand Men raised and disciplined. Lotteries. Battery built. New Castle. My influence in the Council. Colors, Devices, and Mottoes. Ladies' Military Watch. Quakers chosen of the Common Council. Put in the Commission of the peace. Logan fond of me. His Library. Appointed Postmaster-General. Chosen Assemblyman. Commissioner to treat with Indians at Carlisle and at Easton. Project and establish Academy. Pamphlet on it. Journey to Boston. At Albany. Plan of union of the colonies. Copy of

it. Remarks upon it. It fails, and how. Journey to Boston in 1754. Disputes about it in our Assembly. My part in them. New Governor. Disputes with him. His character and sayings to me. Chosen Alderman. Project of Hospital. My share in it. Its success. Boxes. Made a Commissioner of the Treasury. My commission to defend the frontier counties. Raise Men and build Forts. Militia Law of my drawing. Made Colonel. Parade of my Officers. Offence to Proprietor. Assistance to Boston Ambassadors. Journey with Shirley, &c. Meet with Braddock. Assistance to him. To the Officers of his Army. Furnish him with Forage. His concessions to me and character of me. Success of my Electrical Experiments. Medal sent me. Present Royal Society, and Speech of President. Denny's Arrival and Courtship to me. His character. My service to the Army in the affairs of Quarters. Disputes about the Proprietor's Taxes continued. Project for paving the City. I am sent to England. Negotiation there. *Canada delenda est.* My Pamphlet. Its reception and effect. Projects drawn from me concerning the Conquest. Acquaintance made and their services to me — Mrs. S. M. Small, Sir John P., Mr. Wood, Sargent Strahan, and others. Their characters. Doctorate from Edinburgh, St. Andrew's. Doctorate from Oxford. Journey to Scotland. Lord Leicester, Mr. Prat. De Grey. Jackson. State of Affairs in England. Delays. Eventful Journey into Holland and Flanders. Agency from Maryland. Son's appointment. My Return. Allowance and thanks. Journey to Boston. John Penn, Governor. My conduct toward him. The Paxton Murders. My Pamphlet. Rioters march to Philadelphia. Governor retires to my House. My conduct. Sent out to the Insurgents. Turn them back. Little thanks. Disputes revived. Resolutions against continuing under Proprietary Government. Another Pamphlet. Cool thoughts. Sent again to England with Petition. Negotiation there.

Lord H. His character. Agencies from New Jersey, Georgia, Massachusetts. Journey into Germany, 1766. Civilities received there. Göttingen Observations. Ditto into France in 1767. Ditto in 1769. Entertainment there at the Academy. Introduced to the King and the Mesdames, Mad. Victoria and Mrs. Lamagnon. Duc de Chaulnes, M. Beaumont, Le Roy, D'Alibard, Nollet. See Journals. Holland.

Reprint my papers and add many. Books presented to me from many authors. My Book translated into French. Lightning Kite. Various Discoveries. My manner of prosecuting that Study. King of Denmark invites me to dinner. Recollect my Father's Proverb. Stamp Act. My opposition to it. Recommendation of J. Hughes. Amendment of it. Examination in Parliament. Reputation it gave me. Caressed by Ministry. Charles Townsend's Act. Opposition to it. Stoves and chimney-plates. Armonica. Acquaintance with Ambassadors. Russian Intimation. Writing in newspapers. Glasses from Germany. Grant of Land in Nova Scotia. Sicknesses. Letters to America returned hither. The consequences. Insurance Office. My character. Costs me nothing to be civil to inferiors; a good deal to be submissive to superiors, &c., &c. Farce of Perpetual Motion. Writing for Jersey Assembly. Hutchinson's letters. Temple. Suit in Chancery. Abuse before the Privy Council. Lord Hillsborough's character and conduct. Lord Dartmouth. Negotiation to prevent the War. Return to America. Bishop of St. Asaph. Congress. Assembly. Committee of Safety. Chevaux-de-frise. Sent to Boston, to the Camp. To Canada, to Lord Howe. To France. Treaty, &c.

INDEX

Academy, founding an, 140–43.
Adams, Matthew, 13.
Addison, Joseph, *Cato*, 98.
Alexander, James, 157.
Allen, Judge, of New Jersey, 70.
Allen, William, 131.
Amboy, 25, 26.
American Philosophical Society, the, 130.
Amherst, General Lord, 200.
Annis, Captain, 42.
Arch Street, 149.
Argument, 14, 18–20, 43.
Art of Thinking, 18.
Art of Virtue, The, a proposed book, 103, 104, xv.
Articles of Belief and Acts of Religion, 93.

Baird, Dr., 76.
Baltimore, Lord, 210.
Banbury, Oxfordshire, 3.
Baptists, 7.
Bard, Dr., 48.
Bartholomew Close, 52.
Basket, the King's printer, 50.
Batson's Coffee House, 53.
Battery, securing a, 131–37.
Beatty, Rev. Mr., 183, 184.
Benezet, Mr., 126.
Bethlehem, Pa., 180, 181, 185.
Bible, concealment of, 5, 6.
Bloomsbury Square, 54.
Board of Trade, the, 158.
Bond, the two Doctors, 176, 177.
Bond, Dr. Thomas, establishes a hospital with Franklin's help, 145–48.
Bonnell, Captain, 200–01.
Boston, 4; Franklin's life in, 6–24; a short visit to, 35–37; 190.
Boston News Letter, 20.
Boyle's Lectures, 70.
Braddock, General Edward, 164–76, 188, 201, 202.
Bradford, Andrew, 31, 32, 76, 77, 78, 84, 85, 119.
Bradford, William, 25, 31.
Breintnal, Joseph, 74, 75, 77, 83.
Bristol, England, 60.
British *Review*, 114.
Brockden, Charles, 87, 88, 89.
Brown, Dr., 27.
Brownell, George, 8.
Buffon, Georges Louis Leclerc, Count de, 191–92.
Bunyan, John, 12, 25–26.
Burlington, N.J., 27, 69, 70.
Burnet, Governor, 39, 78.
Burnet, Bishop, 39.
Burton's *Historical Collections*, 12.
Busybody, 77.
Bustill, Samuel, 70.

Cambridge University, xv.
Canton, John, 194.
Carlisle, Pa., 144.
Cato, 98.
Cave, publishers of *The Gentleman's Magazine*, 191.
Charles, Mr., London Agent for the Province of Pennsylvania, 208, 212.
Charleston, S.C., 202.
Chastity, 96.
Chelsea, 59.
Chestnut Street, Philadelphia, 81.
Cicero, 98.
Clapham, Colonel, 184.
Cleanliness, 95.
Clifton, John, 151.
Clinton, Governor, 131, 132.
Cocker's Arithmetic, 17.
Coleman, William, 75; kindness to Franklin, 80.
Collins, John, 14, 15, 24, 33, 36, 38–42, 45, 71.
Collinson, Peter, 190, 191, 208.

Conway, General, 175.
Cooper's Creek, 28.
Cooper, Joseph, 70.
Copley, Sir Godfrey, 194.
Craven Street, London, 153.
Croghan, George, 171.
Crooked Billet, 30.

Dalibard, Thomas François, 192, 193.
Declaration of Independence, xvi.
Decow, Isaac, 70.
Defoe's *Essay on Projects*, 13; *Family Instructor*, *Moll Flanders*, *Religious Courtship*, *Robinson Crusoe*, 26.
Deism, 70, 71.
De Lor, *Philadelphia Experiments*, 193.
Denham, Mr., Quaker merchant, 49–51, 60; employs Franklin, 61, 63; dies, 64.
Denny, Captain William, Governor of Pennsylvania, 162, 189; his first intercourse with Franklin, 194–96, 197, 198, 199; passes an act of the Assembly taxing the proprietary estate, 211; is removed from office, 213.
Dissertation on Liberty and Necessity, Pleasure and Pain, A, 53.
Don Saltero, 59.
Dryden, quoted, 71.
Dunbar, Colonel, 170, 174, 175, 176, 188, 189.
Dunciad, 196.
Dunkers, the, 137–38.
du Port Royal's *Art of Thinking*, 18.

Ecton, Northamptonshire, 3, 4, xv.
Electricity, 190–94.
Essay on Projects, 13.
Essays to do Good, 13.

Fable of the Bees, 53.
Falmouth, England, 205, 207.
Family Instructor, 26.
Fawkener, Sir Everard, 188.
Fire department, 120–28; 133–35.
Fireplace, the Pennsylvania, 138, 139.
Fisher, husband of Franklin's first cousin, 4.
Folger, Peter, grandfather of Franklin, 6.
Fort Duquesne, Battle of, 172–74, 176, 189.
Fort George, 200, 201.
Fothergill, Dr. John, 152, 191, 208, 209.
Foster, Dr., 114.
Francis, Mr., attorney-general, 140.
Franklin, Abiah (Folger) mother of Franklin, 6, 10.
Franklin, Benjamin, uncle of Benjamin, 4, 6, 7.
Franklin, Benjamin, ancestry and parentage, 3–7; schooling, 7, 8; learning his father's trade of tallow-chandler, 8; an early instance of misdirected public spirit, 8, 9; his indifference in regard to food, 10; fondness for reading, 12–13; becomes an apprentice in his brother James's printing office, 13 writes and sells ballads, 14; practices prose-writing, 14–18; becomes a vegetarian, 17; his studies, 17–22; writes for the *New England Courant*, 20–22; his disputes with his brother James, 21–24; a new arrangement with his brother, 22–23; asserts his freedom and goes to New York, 23–24; the journey from New York to Philadelphia, 25–29; first day in Philadelphia, 29–30; finds employment and lodgings, 30–33; urged by the governor to set up a printing office in Philadelphia, 33–35; goes home with a letter from the governor to his father, 35–36; his father refus-

ing, on account of his youth, to set him up in business, he returns to Philadelphia, 37–39; relations with Collins, 40–41; promises of assistance from the governor, 41–42; vegetarianism and argument, 42–43; becomes attached to Miss Deborah Read, 44; his acquaintances in Philadelphia, 44–47; on the governor's assurances of financial assistance he sails to London to buy an outfit for his printing-office, 47–48; arrival in London and disclosure of Governor Keith's faithlessness, 50–51; finds employment at Palmer's printing-house, 52–53; makes acquaintances, 53–54; breaks with his friend, James Ralph, 54–55; enters Watts's printing-house, 55; his temperate habits, 55–56; his lodgings, 57–59; his swimming powers, 59–62; enters the employment of Mr. Denham, and sails for America, 61; becomes a clerk in Philadelphia, 63–64; ill of pleurisy, 64; by the death of Mr. Denham he loses his position and again enters the printing-house of Keimer, 64; is discharged by Keimer, but afterwards reëngaged, 67–69; agrees to a partnership with Hugh Meredith, 68; makes friends in New Jersey, 69–70; morality, 72–73; leaves Keimer and starts business with Meredith, 72–73; forms a debating club called the Junto, 73–75; his industry in business, 75–76; starts a newspaper, *The Pennsylvania Gazette*, 77; increasing business, 78; his partnership with Meredith is dissolved and he continues the business alone, 79–81; advocates an increase of paper currency, 81; growing business, 82–83; courtship and marriage, 84–87; establishes the first subscription library in America, 87–90; assisted by the industry and frugality of his wife, 90–91; his religious beliefs, 91–94; his plan of moral improvement, 94–106; his project of founding an international society for the practice of virtue, 107–10; publication and success of *Poor Richard's Almanac*, 110–11; his manner of conducting his newspaper, 111–12; sends one of his journeymen to South Carolina under a partnership agreement, 112–13; his relations with the Rev. Mr. Hemphill, 113; learning of languages, 114–16; visits Boston and Newport, 116; loses his little boy, 116; brings about the enlargement of the Junto's usefulness by the formation of subordinate clubs, 117–18; chosen clerk of the General Assembly of Pennsylvania, 118; turns an enemy into a friend, 118–19; made postmaster, 119; accomplishes reform of the city watch, 119–20; assists in the organization of a fire department, 120–22; his acquaintance with the Rev. George Whitefield, 123–24; increasing prosperity, 128; forms partnerships in other colonies, 129; starts a movement for an academy, 130; establishes the American Philosophical Society, 130; successful efforts in behalf of the public defense, 130–37; his rule as to public office, 132–33; invents the Franklin stove, 138–39; founds an academy which afterwards became the University of Philadelphia and finally the University of Pennsylvania, 140–43; takes Mr. David Hall into partnership, 142; elected to membership in

the Assembly, 143–44; furthers the plans of Dr. Thomas Bond for a hospital, 145–48; advice to a solicitor of subscriptions, 148–49; his share in bringing about the paving, cleaning, and lighting of Philadelphia streets, 150–52; his project for the cleaning of London streets, 152–56; postmaster-general for America jointly with Mr. William Hunter, 156; takes a journey to New England, where he receives the degree of Master of Arts from Harvard College, 156–57; appointed one of the commissioners to arrange an alliance with the Six Nations, 157; his plan for a union of the colonies, 157–59; his pleasant relations with Governor Morris, 159–60; his services in procuring money from the Assembly to be used by the government of Massachusetts in an attack upon the French, 163–64; procures transport wagons and supplies for General Braddock's expedition against Fort Duquesne, 164–71; his unheeded warning to Braddock, 172–73; recommendatory letters from Braddock, 175; partially successful efforts to secure the return of servants who had been enlisted in the army, 175; difficulties with the owners of transport wagons, 176; forebodings as to the outcome of the expedition, 176–77; appointed on a commission to spend an appropriation for the defense of the Province, 179; promotes the formation of a militia, 179, 186–87; raises troops and commands an expedition to build a line of forts against the Indians, 179–85; colonel in the militia, 186–87; incurs the enmity of the proprietor of the Province, 187–88; his relations with Governor Morris, 188–89; his electrical experiments and discoveries, 190–94; chosen a member of the Royal Society, 194; receives a medal from the Royal Society, 194; his first meeting and subsequent relations with Governor Denny, 194–96; appointed agent of the Province of Pennsylvania to present its petition to the crown against the Penn family, 196; his relations with General Lord Loudoun, 197–203, delayed in starting for London by Loudoun's indecision, 198–202; unsuccessful efforts to secure reimbursement for money advanced to buy provisions for the army, 202–03; events of the voyage, 203–207; lands at Falmouth and proceeds to London, 207; success of his mission, xiv, xv; visits Dr. Fothergill and Mr. Peter Collinson, 208; his conversation with Lord Granville, 208–09; his negotiations with the proprietaries, 209–13; receives degrees from Oxford and Edinburgh, xv; tour of the northern colonies, xv; second appointment as colonial agent, xv; mission to France, xvi; final return to America, xvi, xvii; Governor of Pennsylvania, xvii; delegate to Constitutional Convention, xvii; Federalists. xvii; death, xviii; epitaph, xix.

Franklin, Mrs. Benjamin, her married life, 86; her industry and frugality, 90–91; letters to, xiv; dies, xv. *See* Read, Miss Deborah.

Franklin, James, brother of Benjamin, 13, 17; publishes the *New England Courant*, 20; his treatment of his brother Benjamin, 21–23; trouble with the

authorities, 22; makes another arrangement with Benjamin, 22–23; Benjamin leaves, 23; Benjamin visits him on return to Boston, 35–36; becomes reconciled with Benjamin, 116.
Franklin, John, brother of Benjamin, 11, 37.
Franklin, John, uncle of Benjamin, 3, 4.
Franklin, Josiah, father of Benjamin, 4; emigrates to New England, 6; his family, 6, 7–9; his person and character, 9, 10; his grave, 11; 12–15, 16, 21, 23, 36, 37.
Franklin, Sarah, daughter of Benjamin, xiv.
Franklin, Samuel, first cousin of Benjamin, 12.
Franklin, Samuel, second cousin of Benjamin, 4.
Franklin, Thomas, grandfather of Benjamin, 3, 4.
Franklin, Thomas, uncle of Benjamin, 3, 4; his daughter, xv.
Franklin, William, son of Benjamin, appointed clerk to the General Assembly of Pennsylvania, 144, 167, 179, 207, xiv.
Franklin family, the, 3–7.
Franklin stove, the, 138–39.
French, Colonel, of Newcastle, 34, 49.
Frontenac, 172.
Front Street, Philadelphia, 81.
Frugality, 95, 96, 103.

Gentleman's Magazine, the, 191.
Georgia, settlement of, 124–25.
Gnadenhut, 179, 180, 181, 185.
Godfrey, Thomas, 72, 74, 84.
Godfrey, Mrs. Thomas, 84, 85.
Gordon, Major, Governor of Pennsylvania, 63.
Grace, Robert, 75; his kindness to Franklin, 80, 87; manufactures the Franklin stove, 139.
Granville, Lord, 208, 209.
Greenwood's English Grammar, 18.

Halifax, Lord, 4.
Halifax, 200, 201.
Hall, David, 142.
Hamilton, Alexander, xvii.
Hamilton, Andrew, 49, 51, 79, 82.
Hamilton, Governor James, 49, 157, 159, 160, 161.
Hanbury, John, 208.
Harry, David, 65, 83, 85.
Harvard College, 157.
Hertford, Lord, 175.
Hemphill, the Rev. Mr., 113, 114.
Historical Collections, 12.
Holmes, Captain Robert, 33–36, 64.
House, George, 72.
Hume, David, 175.
Humility, 96, 104–06.
Hunter, William, 156.

Indians, a treaty with, 144; their fondness for rum, 144–45; conference with chiefs of the Six Nations, 157; in the French and Indian War, 171–74, 179–83.
Industry, 95, 102.
Infallibility of Human Judgment, 53.
Innis, a Philadelphia messenger, 199.
Integrity, 104.
Isted, Mr., 4.

James, a printer, 66.
Junto, organization of, 73–75; 81, 82, 87, 88, 105, 111; foundation of subordinate clubs, 117; 118, 120, 121, 140.
Justice, 95, 97, 103.

Keimer, Samuel, printer, 31, 32–35, 42; his arguments with Franklin, 43; proposes founding new sect, 43; as a vegetarian, 43, 44, 63; engages Franklin to manage his printing-house, 64, 65, 66; picks a

quarrel with Franklin and discharges him, 67; his financial condition, 68; reëngages Franklin, 68–69; 72; 75–77; fails and goes to Barbadoes, 83–84, 85.
Keith, George, 25.
Keith, Sir William, governor of Pennsylvania, 33–36; proposes to set Franklin up as a printer, 41–42; his postponed promises to Franklin, 47–48; his faithlessness discovered, 50, 51; 63, 71.
Kennedy, Captain, 204, 206.
Kennedy, Mr., 157.
King of Denmark, the, 90.
Kinnersley, Ebenezer, 190, 191.
Kite, Franklin's experiment with a, 193.

Lamps, street, 151, 152.
Lawrence, Colonel, 131.
Le Roy, Jean Baptiste, 193.
Library, subscription, 87–90.
Library, the Philadelphia, the founding of, 87–90.
Lighthouse Tragedy, The, 14.
Little Britain, 51, 53, 57.
Locke, *On Human Understanding*, 18.
Logan, James, 135.
London, Franklin's life as a journeyman printer in, 50–61; lighting and cleaning of its streets, 152–55; Franklin as colonial agent in, 208–13; success of his mission, xiv, xv; returns to in 1764, xv.
Long Island, 25.
Lotteries, 133–34.
Loudoun, Lord, 196–203.
Louisburg, 136, 200.
Lutwidge, Captain, 204.
Lyons, a surgeon, author of *The Infallibility of Human Judgment*, 53.

Macclesfield, Lord, 194.
Madison, James, xvii; quoted xviii.
Mandeville, Dr., author of *Fable of the Bees*, 53.
Mansfield, Lord, 212.
Market Street, Philadelphia, 28, 127.
Mather, Cotton, 6; *Essays to do Good*, 13.
Maugridge, William, 75.
Memorable Things of Socrates, 18.
Meredith, senior, 79, 80.
Meredith, Hugh, 64, 65, 67; arranges a partnership with Franklin in a printing business, 68; 69, 75, 78, 79; settled in North Carolina, 80–81.
Mickle, Samuel, 73.
Militia, organization of, 130–32; 179, 186, 187.
Mill pond, 9.
Minisink River, 180.
Mitchel, Dr., 191.
Moderation, 95.
Moll Flanders, 26.
Money, paper, 81–82.
Morality, 70–72, 92–106.
Moravians, their opinions as to bearing arms, 180; their manner of life, 185, 186.
Morris, Governor Robert Hunter, his appointment, 159; his disputes with the Assembly and his personal friendship with Franklin, 160, 162–63, 188–89; vetoes money-bills of Assembly, 178–84.
Morris, James, 134–35.

Nature and Necessity of a Paper Currency, The, 82.
Newcastle 33, 34, 48, 49.
New England, 6, 81.
New England Courant, the, 20–22.
Newspapers, libel in, 111–12.
Newport, R.I., 37, 116.
Newton, Sir Isaac, 53.
New York, Franklin in, 23, 25.
Niagara, 172.
Nollet, Abbé, 192.
Norris, Isaac, Speaker of the Pennsylvania House, 144, 157.
Northamptonshire, 3, 4, 6.

On Human Understanding, 18.
Onion and Russel, iron dealers, 49.
Order, 95, 96, 99–102.
Orme, Captain, 175.
Osborne, Charles, 44–47.

Palmer, Esquire, 4.
Palmer, a printing shop in London, 52–53, 55.
Pamela, 26.
Paris, Ferdinand John, 210–12.
Parsons, William, 74.
Partnerships, 129.
Paternoster Row, 52.
Pearson, Isaac, 70.
Pemberton, Dr., 53.
Pembroke, Lord, 207.
Penn, Thomas, son of William and chief proprietor of Pennsylvania, in connection with Indian Mission, 157; his hostility to Franklin, 187–88, 195, 209. *See* Proprietors of Pennsylvania.
Penn, William, anecdote of, 135–36.
Penn family, xiv. *See* Proprietors of Pennsylvania.
Pennsylvania Gazette, 77, 78, 111, 114, 128.
Peters, the Rev. Mr., 130.
Peters, Secretary Richard, 157.
Philadelphia, Franklin's life in, 28–48, 63–196.
Philadelphia Experiments, De Lor, 193.
Philosophical Society, the American, 130.
Pilgrim's Progress, 12, 25–26.
Pitt, William, 200.
Plain Truth, 130.
Plutarch's *Lives*, 12.
Poor Richard's Almanac, 110–11; xvii; quoted, xx.
Pope, quoted, 19, 20; 47, 196.
Potts, Stephen, 64, 65, 75.
Pownall, Governor Thomas, 163.
Presbyterian minister, a, 92–93.
Pride, 104–06.
Proprietors of Pennsylvania, the (Thomas and Richard Penn), disputes of the Province with, 161–62, 195–98, 208–13.
Proposals Relating to the Education of Youth in Pennsylvania, 140.
Pythagoras's *Golden Verses*, 97.

Quakers, persecuted, 7, 75; their attitude toward offensive and defensive war, 130, 132–38, 161, 179, 186, xvi.
Quincy, Colonel Josiah, 163, 164.

Ralph, James, acquaintance with Franklin in Philadelphia, 44–47; Pope's allusion to, 47; sails for England with Franklin, 48, 49; life in London with Franklin, 51–54; becomes a country schoolmaster, 54; breaks with Franklin, 54–55; 62, 71; his later reputation as a writer, 196.
Read, John, 29; Franklin lodged at his house, 32–33; 51.
Read, Miss Deborah, her first sight of Franklin, 29–30, 33; Franklin becomes attached to, 44, 48, 52; her unhappy marriage to Rogers, 63, 71; marries Franklin, 86–87; *See* Franklin, Mrs. Benjamin.
Recluse, a, 58–59.
Religion, 70–72, 92–94; 108, 123.
Religion of Nature, 52.
Religious Courtship, 26.
Resolution, 95, 96.
Richardson's *Pamela*, 26.
Riddlesden, an attorney, 50, 51.
Roberts, a publisher, 52.
Robinson Crusoe, 26.
Rogers, marries Miss Read, 63.
Rolls, episode of the, 29.
Rose, Aquila, 25, 32, 83.
Royal Society, 190, 193.

Schooling, 7, 8.
Scull, Nicholas, 74.
Second Street, Philadelphia, 29, 81, 127.

Self-examination, 94–106.
Seller and Shermy on Navigation, 17, 18.
Ships, discussion of speed, 203–05.
Shirley, William, Governor of Massachusetts and commander-in-chief of the British forces in America at the beginning of the French and Indian War, 159, 173, 176, 201, 202.
Shovel, Sir Cloudesley, 206.
Silence, 95, 96.
Sincerity, 95, 96, 103.
Sinclair, Sir John, 169.
Sloane, Sir Hans, 54.
Small-pox, 116.
Society of the Free and Easy, 109.
Solomon's Proverbs, 99.
Spangenberg, a Moravian bishop, 180.
Spectator, 15, 16, 52.
Spence, Dr., 143, 190.
Spottwood, Colonel, 119.
Stamp Act, xv.
Stevenson, Miss Mary, xiv.
Stevenson, Mrs. Margaret, xiv.
Stonehenge, 207.
Stove, Franklin, 138–39.
Streets, paving, cleaning, lighting of, 150–55.
Syng, Mr., 137.

Taylor, Abram, 131.
Temperance, 94, 96, 97, 98, 102.
Tennent, Rev. Gilbert, 148–49.
Thevenot, 60.
Thomas, Governor, 130, 136, 139.
Thomson, James, 99.
Tranquility, 95.
Trenton, 176.
Tryon, on vegetable diet, 17, 42.

University of Pennsylvania, established, 141–43, xix.
University of Philadelphia, establishment of, 141–43.

Vanity, 2.
Vauxhall, 152.
Vegetarianism, 17, 42–44.
Vernon, Mr., 37; Franklin's debt to, 39–42, 66, 71, 79.
Virtues, cultivation of, 95–106.

Walnut Street, Philadelphia, 81.
Washington, George, xvii, xviii.
Watch, the city, of Philadelphia, 119–20.
Water Street, Philadelphia, 30, 63.
Watson, Joseph, 44–47.
Watson, Sir William, 193.
Watts, the printer, 55, 56, 59.
Webb, George, 65, 66, 75, 76–77.
Welfare, Michael, 137–38.
Wellingborough, 4.
Wharf, building, 9.
Whitefield, the Rev. George, 123–28, 141, 148.
Whitmash, 83.
Wilcox, a London bookseller, 53.
Wilton, England, 207.
Witty Club, 65.
Wolfe, General James, 200.
Wollaston's *Religion of Nature*, 52.
Women, education of, 112–13.
Worthilake, Captain, 14.
Wright, Dr., 193.
Wygate, 59, 60, 61.
Wyndham, Sir William, 61, 62.

Xenophon's *Memorable Things of Socrates*, 18.

Yale College, 157.

R·L·S
19-20